

Ellen Henrichs-Kleinen

Gramatica limbii engleze

- Timpurile
- Diateza activă și diateza pasivă
- Verbele auxiliare
- Vorbirea indirectă
- Infinitivul și gerunziul
- Propozițiile introduse prin *if*
- Substantivele (formarea pluralului, genitivul)
- Articolul
- Adjectivul și adverbul
- Pronumele
- Prepozițiile
- Conjuncțiile
- Topica în propoziție

Traducere
Mihaela Alexandru



NICULESCU

Contents Cuprins

Introduction	Introducere _____ 13
The Verb	Verbul _____ 15
The Tenses – Active Voice	Timpurile – Diateza activă _____ 16
Present Tense Simple	Timpul prezent – aspectul simplu _____ 17
Present Tense Continuous	Timpul prezent – aspectul continuu _____ 20
Present Tense Simple and Present Tense Continuous in Contrast	Paralelă între Present Tense Simple și Present Tense Continuous _____ 24
Past Tense Simple	Past Tense – aspectul simplu _____ 26
Past Tense Continuous	Past Tense – aspectul continuu _____ 30
Past Tense Simple and Past Tense Continuous in Contrast	Paralelă între Past Tense Simple și Past Tense Continuous _____ 33
Present Perfect Simple	Present Perfect – aspectul simplu _____ 36
Present Perfect Continuous	Present Perfect – aspectul continuu _____ 39
Past Tense Simple and Present Perfect Simple in Contrast	Paralelă între Past Tense Simple și Present Perfect Simple _____ 43
Past Perfect Simple	Past Perfect – aspectul simplu _____ 46

© 1997/1998 by FALKEN Verlag, 65527 Niedernhausen/Ts, Germany

pentru ediția română

© Editura NICULESCU SRL, București, 2003

Adresa: 060204 – București, Sector 6

Bd. Regiei 6D, Tel/Fax: 312.97.83

Tel.: 312.97.82, 312.97.84

E-mail: edit@niculescu.ro

club@niculescu.ro

Internet: www.niculescu.ro

Procesare computerizată: *Manuela Ruse*

Tipărit la S.C. EUROPONTIC S.R.L.

ISBN 973-568-349-0

Past Perfect Continuous	Past Perfect – aspectul continuu _____ 47
Future I („Will”-Future) Simple	Viitor I _____ 52
Future I („Will”-Future) Continuous	Viitor I/aspectul continuu _____ 53
„Going to”-Future	Viitorul cu „Going to” _____ 56
Present Tense Simple Referring to Future	Present Tense Simple cu sens de viitor _____ 57
Present Tense Continuous Referring to Future	Prezent forma continuă cu sens de viitor _____ 57
Future II Simple	Viitor II _____ 59
Future II Continuous	Viitor II – aspectul continuu _____ 61
Conditional I Simple	Condițional I _____ 63
Conditional I Continuous	Condițional I – aspectul continuu _____ 64
Conditional II Simple	Condițional II _____ 66
Conditional II Continuous	Condițional II – aspectul continuu _____ 68
The Tenses – Active Voice Synoptic Table	Tabloul de ansamblu al timpurilor – Diateza activă _____ 70
The Tenses – Passive Voice The Tenses – Passive Voice Synoptic Table	Timpurile – Diateza pasivă _____ 77 Tabloul de ansamblu al timpurilor – Diateza pasivă _____ 78
Transforming Active into Passive	Transformarea diatezei active în diateză pasivă _____ 80

The Passive Infinitive – Present Tense Form	Diateza pasivă – Infinitiv prezent _____ 83
The Passive Infinitive – Present Perfect Form	Diateza pasivă – infinitiv perfect _____ 83
Reported Speech	Vorbirea indirectă _____ 86
No Backshift	Timp nemodificat _____ 87
Backshift	Modificarea timpului _____ 87
Exceptions: No Backshift	Excepții: fără modificarea timpului _____ 88
Backshift in Connection with Modal Auxiliaries	Modificarea timpului la verbele auxiliare modale _____ 88
Changes in Time and Place Expressions	Modificări în expresii de timp și loc _____ 89
Different Sentence Types in Reported Speech	Diferite tipuri de propoziții în vorbirea indirectă _____ 90
Auxiliary Verbs	Verbe auxiliare _____ 95
Primary Auxiliaries	Verbe auxiliare principale _____ 95
Modal Auxiliaries	Verbe modale _____ 100
„Do” in Questions and in Negative Sentences	Folosirea lui „do” în întrebări și negări _____ 108
Question Tags	Întrebări disjunctive _____ 112
Short Answers	Răspunsuri scurte _____ 114
Infinitive and Gerund	Infinitiv/gerunziu _____ 117
Infinitive	Infinitiv/forma de bază _____ 117
Gerund	Gerunziu _____ 122
Infinitive or Gerund	Infinitiv sau gerunziu _____ 126

Conditional Clauses – If-Clauses	Propoziții condiționale – Propoziții cu If _____ 129
Type I: Probable Condition	Tipul I: condiție probabilă _____ 129
Type II: Improbable Condition	Tipul II: condiție improbabilă _____ 133
Type III: Impossible Condition	Tipul III: condiție imposibilă _____ 136
The Noun	Substantivul _____ 140
The Plural	Pluralul _____ 141
The Plural of Compound Nouns	Pluralul substantivelor compuse _____ 142
Plural or Singular	Plural sau singular _____ 144
The Genitive: s-Genitive and of-Genitive	Genitivul: genitivul cu „-s” și genitivul cu „of” _____ 147
The s-Genitive	Genitivul cu „-s” _____ 148
The of-Genitive	Genitivul cu „of” _____ 149
Double Genitive	Genitivul dublu _____ 149
The s-Genitive without a Referent	Genitivul cu „-s” fără cuvânt de referință _____ 150
The Article	Articolul _____ 152
The Definite Article	Articolul hotărât _____ 152
Use of the Definite Article	Folosirea articolului hotărât _____ 152
The Indefinite Article	Articolul nehotărât _____ 155
Use of the Indefinite Article	Folosirea articolului nehotărât _____ 155

The Adjective	Adjectivul _____ 160
The Comparison of the Adjective	Gradele de comparație ale adjectivului _____ 161
The Regular Comparison with „-er”/„-est”	Comparația regulată cu „-er”/„-est” _____ 161
The Regular Comparison with „more”/„most”	Comparația regulată cu „more”/„most” _____ 162
The Irregular Comparison	Comparația neregulată _____ 162
Adjectives with Different Comparison Forms	Adjective cu forme diferite ale gradelor de comparație _____ 162
Sentences with Comparisons	Comparația în propoziție _____ 163
The Adverb	Adverbul _____ 166
The Formation of Adverbs	Modul de formare al adverbilor _____ 166
The Comparison of Adverbs	Comparația adverbilor _____ 168
The Position of Adverbs and Adverbial Phrases	Poziția adverbilor și a locuțiunilor adverbiale _____ 168
Adverbs of Manner	Adverbe de mod _____ 169
Adverbs of Frequency	Adverbe de frecvență _____ 169
Adverbs of Place and Time	Adverbe de loc și de timp _____ 170
Adverbs of Degree	Adverbe de grad _____ 170
Adverbs Modifying a Whole Sentence	Adverbe care se referă la o întreagă propoziție _____ 171
Several Adverbs at the End of a Sentence	Mai multe adverbe la sfârșitul propoziției _____ 171
Adverb or Adjective	Adverb sau adjectiv _____ 173

The Pronoun	Pronumele _____	176
The Personal Pronoun	Pronumele personal _____	176
The Possessive Pronoun	Pronumele posesiv _____	178
The Interrogative Pronoun	Pronumele interogativ _____	181
The Reflexive Pronoun	Pronumele reflexiv _____	184
The Demonstrative Pronoun	Pronumele demonstrativ _____	189
The Relative Pronoun	Pronumele relativ _____	191
Relative Pronouns in the Defining Relative Clause	Pronume relative în propoziția relativă necesară _____	191
Relative Pronouns in the Non-Defining Relative Clause	Pronume relative în propoziția relativă nenecesară _____	193
Relative Pronouns Referring to a Sentence	Pronume relative care se referă la o propoziție _____	194
Relative Pronouns without a Referent	Pronume relative fără cuvânt/ propoziție de relație _____	194
The Preposition	Prepoziția _____	198
Function and Position	Funcția și poziția _____	198
The Most Common Prepositions and their Uses	Cele mai uzuale prepoziții și folosirea lor _____	200
	„At”, „in”, „on” cu sens spațial _____	200
	„At”, „in”, „on” cu sens temporal _____	201
	„Above”, „over”, „across” _____	203
	„via” – peste _____	203
	„Under”, „below” – sub _____	203

„Between”, „among” – între _____	203
„To”, „towards” – spre _____	204
„To”, „as far as” – până la _____	204
„After”, „behind”, „beyond”, „past” – după _____	204
„In front of”, „before”, – în fața _____	205
„Ago”, „before” (ambele în poziție finală) – înainte, acum ... _____	205
„Since”, „for” – de _____	206
„By”, „with” – cu _____	206

Prepositions Which are Dependent on Verbs

Prepoziții dependente de verbe _____	210
---	-----

The Conjunction

Conjunția _____	217
„if” sau „when”? _____	218
„during”, „while” sau „whereas”? _____	218
„because”, „since”, „as” sau „for”? _____	219
„too”, „also”, „as well”, „so”, „neither” sau „nor”, „not either”? _____	219
„like”, „as” sau „how”? _____	221

Indefinite Quantifiers

Numerale nehotărâte _____	225
„Some” și „any” _____	225
„Much” și „many”/ „little” și „few” _____	227
„Each”, „every”, „any”, „all” și „whole” _____	230
„No”, „not”, „none” „nobody”(„no one”) și „nothing” _____	233
„Both”, „either” și „neither” _____	235

Word Order	Topica în propoziție _____ 238
Word Order in Statements	Ordinea cuvintelor în propoziții afirmative _____ 238
Word Order in Sentences with Two Objects	Topica în propoziții cu două complemente _____ 239
Exceptions to the S-P-O-Rule (Inversion)	Excepții de la regula S-P-C (Inversiune) _____ 240
Word Order in Questions	Ordinea cuvintelor în propoziții interogative _____ 242
British and American English in Contrast	Paralelă între engleza britanică și engleza americană _____ 245
Pronunciation	Pronunție _____ 245
Spelling	Ortografie _____ 246
Grammar	Gramatică _____ 246
Vocabulary	Vocabular _____ 247
Appendix	Anexă _____ 249
Appendix 1: Irregular Verbs	Anexa 1: Verbe neregulate _____ 249
Appendix 2: Key to Exercises and Tests	Anexa 2: Rezolvarea exercițiilor și testelor _____ 253

Introducere

Lucrarea este o carte de învățare și exersare a gramaticii engleze pentru cei care studiază limba engleză la orice vârstă și la orice nivel.

Scopul acestei cărți este acela de a elucidă probleme legate de domeniul gramaticii prin exerciții care folosesc toate structurile gramaticale. De aici reiese și dualitatea planurilor pe care este construită această carte, și anume acela al învățării și acela al exercițiului.

Explicațiile ușor de înțeles, care merg în paralel cu termenii englezești de specialitate uzuali, regulile ușor de memorat, exemplele elucidante și tabelele clare transmit celui care studiază o bază solidă de cunoștințe. Împărțirea cărții pe capitole aferente fiecărei părți de vorbire sau structuri facilitează lucrul sistematic, dar și posibila limitare la anumite capitole alese, ca și folosirea cărții ca pe o lucrare de informare generală pentru documentarea asupra unor anumite teme.

Fiecărui capitol i se rezervă un număr mare de exerciții de cele mai diferite forme și grade de dificultate. La sfârșitul cărții se află o anexă cu cheia exercițiilor, utilă verificării corectitudinii rezolvării acestora.

Pentru a obține cele mai bune rezultate, vă recomandăm următoarea suită de procedee în timpul învățării:

1. Alegerea capitolului care vă creează dificultăți în utilizarea limbii engleze;
2. Studiarea explicațiilor, regulilor și exemplelor pentru a atinge nivelul necesar al cunoștințelor de bază;

3. Rezolvarea exercițiilor pentru a aplica elementele care au fost învățate teoretic:

4. Corectarea cu ajutorul anexei cu soluții;

5. Reluarea exercițiilor greșite și reverificarea lor.

Exercițiile, aplicate punctual și regulat, ajută la umplerea lacunelor în domeniul gramaticii engleze și la dobândirea siguranței în folosirea structurilor gramaticale.

Cartea reprezintă un sprijin pentru toți cei care doresc să-și îmbunătățească și să-și extindă capacitățile în domeniul limbii engleze.

The Verb

Verbul

În această carte de gramatică engleză, verbului i se acordă un spațiu foarte larg, deoarece fără verb nu poate fi formulată nici o propoziție completă, iar majoritatea elevilor au probleme cu această parte de vorbire.

Verbele se subîmpart în **verbe predicative (Verbs)** și **verbe auxiliare (Auxiliaries)**.

Verbele predicative sunt toate verbele, care exprimă înțelesul deplin al unei activități, de exemplu to go, to write, to come, to see etc.

Verbele auxiliare sunt folosite pentru a exprima relațiile de timp și de mod ale verbelor predicative. Verbe auxiliare în limba engleză sunt: to have*, to be*, to do*, may, can, shall, will, must, ought to, used to, need*.

Un verb are trei **forme de bază**, de care este nevoie la formarea diverselor Tenses (timpuri):

1. Prima formă a verbului: Infinitive (infinitiv/forma de bază)

Exemplu: to go – a merge

Infinitivul se marchează în limba engleză cu „to”.

2. A doua formă a verbului: Past Tense (forma de trecut)

Exemplu: went – am mers

3. A treia formă a verbului: Past Participle (participiu perfect)

Exemplu: gone – mers

În limba engleză există **verbe regulate** (la care formele a doua și a treia se alcătuiesc din infinitiv/forma de bază plus terminația „-ed”) și **verbe neregulate**.

Exemplu: *regulat:* to look – looked – looked

neregulat: to go – went – gone

O listă de verbe neregulate utilizate cel mai frecvent se află la Anexa 1 (v. pag. 249). Ele trebuie învățate.

La formele verbale se face deosebirea între **Finite Forms (forme finite/conjugate)** și **Infinite Forms (forme infinite/neconjugate)**.

* Aceste verbe auxiliare pot fi și verbe predicative.

- Formele finite ale verbului depind de persoană și de număr (singular, plural).

Exemplu: I go, he goes, they go, Paul went

- Formele infinite ale verbului sunt:

1. Infinitive (infinitiv/forma de bază)

Exemplu: to go – a merge

2. Gerund (gerunziu/verb care a devenit substantiv)

Exemplu: going – mersul

3. Participle (participiu)

Exemplu: going – care merge (Present Participle; participiu prezent)
gone – mers (Past Participle; participiu perfect)

The Tenses – Active Voice

Timpurile – Diateza activă

În limba engleză există opt timpuri:

1. Present Tense (prezent)
2. Past Tense (trecut)
3. Present Perfect (perfect)
4. Past Perfect (mai mult ca perfect)
5. Future I (viitor I)
6. Future II (viitor II)
7. Conditional I (condițional I)
8. Conditional II (condițional II)

Aceste timpuri obțin adesea conotația „Simple”, cu care denumesc **aspectul „simplu”** al timpului. Toate timpurile au **aspect „continuu”**, care sunt numite fie „Progressive Form” sau „Continuous Form” sau „ing-Form”. Timpurile sunt subîmpărțite în **Active Voice** (diateza activă) și **Passive Voice** (diateza pasivă).

- La activ subiectul propoziției execută el însuși o activitate.
Exemplu: I drive home. – Eu merg spre casă cu mașina.
- La pasiv se execută o activitate cu subiectul.
Exemplu: I am driven home. – Eu sunt dus acasă cu mașina.

Present Tense Simple

Timpul prezent – aspectul simplu

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I work	I don't* work	Do I work?
you work	you don't work	Do you work?
he works	he doesn't** work	Does he work?
she works	she doesn't work	Does she work?
it works	it doesn't work	Does it work?
we work	we don't work	Do we work?
you work	you don't work	Do you work?
they work	they don't work	Do they work?

Exemple

Formarea lui Present Tense Simple:

- Prima formă a verbului – la he, she, it (persoana a 3-a singular) + terminația „(e)s”.

Exemplu: I work

dar: he works

- Negatia și interogația se formează cu „do”, iar la he, she, it – cu „does” și cu prima formă a verbului.

Exemplu: I don't like hamburgers. – Nu-mi plac hamburgerii.

He doesn't work. – El nu lucrează.

Atenție: Verbul predicativ nu primește „-s”!

Exemplu: Do you watch TV? – Te uiți la televizor?

Does he go to school? – El se duce la școală?

Notă:

- La verbele care se termină în sunet de tip „-tch” sau „-o”, la persoana a 3-a singular se adaugă „-es”.

Exemplu: to watch – he watches

to go – he goes

- „-y” la sfârșitul verbului se transformă la persoana a 3-a singular în „-ie”, dacă nu este precedat de o vocală (a, e, i, o, u).

Exemplu: to hurry – he hurries

- „Have” devine la persoana a 3-a singular „has”.

Exemplu: to have – he has

* don't = do not ** doesn't = does not

Formare

De reținut

- „To be” are la Present Tense trei forme (am, are, is):

I am	– eu sunt
you are	– tu ești
he, she, it is	– el, ea este
we are	– noi suntem
you are	– voi sunteți
they are	– ei sunt

- „Can”, „must” și „may” nu au la persoana a 3-a singular „-s”. Verbul care urmează după ele stă la Infinitive (infinitiv/forma de bază).

Exemplu: He can come. – El poate veni.
She must go. – Ea trebuie să plece.

Present Tense Simple se folosește

- în exprimarea acțiunilor repetate regulat sau în mod obișnuit.

Exemplu: He often goes to the cinema. – El se duce adesea la cinema.

<i>Cuvinte semnal:</i>	usually	– de obicei
	always	– totdeauna
	sometimes	– câteodată
	occasionally	– ocazional
	normally	– în mod normal
	every ...	– (în/de) fiecare
	never	– niciodată
	seldom	– arareori
	often	– adesea

- în constatări general valabile.

Exemplu: The sun rises in the east. – Soarele răsare din Est.

- când se succed mai multe acțiuni.

Exemplu: He sits down, drinks a cup of tea, and then begins to read. – El se așază, bea o ceașcă de ceai și începe apoi să citească.

- la exprimarea unor *întâmplări* viitoare, care sunt *stabilite* deja printr-un plan de acțiune, program etc.

Exemplu: The train leaves at 7 o'clock. – Trenul pleacă la ora 7.

- la verbe cu *sens static* și verbe care exprimă *gândirea* și *recunoașterea*, care nu iau formă continuă (forma -ing).

Dintre ele fac parte:

to be	– a fi	to like	– a-i plăcea
to believe	– a crede	to love	– a iubi
to belong	– a aparține	to mean	– a însemna
to doubt	– a se îndoi	to notice	– a observa

to forget	– a uita	to prefer	– a prefera
to hate	– a detesta/a urî	to remain	– a rămâne
to hear	– a auzi	to realize	– a-și da seama
to remember	– a-și aminti	to think	– a gândi/a crede
to see	– a vedea	to understand	– a înțelege
to seem	– a părea	to want	– a vrea
to smell	– a mirosi	to wish	– a dori etc.

Exercises

Exerciții

- I. *Decide whether to put an „-s” behind the verb.*

Decideți dacă după verb urmează un „-s”.

- | | |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. I (read). | 13. The neighbour (work). |
| 2. Paul (see). | 14. The secretary (telephone). |
| 3. The Bakers (live). | 15. The workers (put). |
| 4. Mr and Mrs Palmer (read). | 16. The three girls (walk). |
| 5. The boys (like). | 17. The girl (think). |
| 6. You (see). | 18. The dog (bark). |
| 7. They (come). | 19. It (rain). |
| 8. Maud (play). | 20. The flowers (grow). |
| 9. The children (write). | 21. Paul and his brother (play). |
| 10. The teacher (explain). | 22. The telephone (ring). |
| 11. Mother (cook). | 23. My father (drive). |
| 12. We (visit). | 24. The pictures (hang). |

- II. *Decide whether an „-e” is missing.*

Decideți dacă lipsește un „-e”.

- | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. He read-s. | 6. The lady say-s. |
| 2. She watch-s. | 7. The bus park-s. |
| 3. Mary teach-s. | 8. She push-s. |
| 4. Peter do-s. | 9. Susan rush-s. |
| 5. The student look-s. | 10. The postman bring-s. |

- III. *Decide whether the „-y” turns into „-ie-” când se adaugă „-s”.*

Decideți dacă „-y” se transformă în „-ie-”, când se adaugă „-s”.

- | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. Michael (hurry). | 6. The cat (play). |
| 2. The teacher (annoy). | 7. The butcher (carry). |
| 3. He (say). | 8. The pupil (try). |
| 4. The boss (stay). | 9. It (vary). |
| 5. Mrs Mayer (worry). | 10. The child (cry). |

IV. Put into the correct Present Tense Simple Form. Form statements, negative statements or questions.

Puneți la forma corectă a prezentului. Formați propoziții afirmative, negative sau interogative.

1. ...you (to live) in Brighton?
2. I (not/to live) in England.
3. The Parkers (to live) there.
4. Mr Parker (to work) at the harbour.
5. He (not/to like) his work.
6. Mrs Parker (to like) her job as a secretary.
7. She (not/to want) to stay at home all day.
8. The children, Cindy and Bert, (to go) to school.
9. Cindy (to go) to a comprehensive school, Bert (to attend) a grammar school.
10. They (to come) home at 5 p.m.
11. They (to wear) school uniforms.
12. After school Cindy (to take) the bus home.
13. Bert (to have) a bike, so he (to cycle) home.
14. In the evening the Parkers (to watch) TV or (to play) games.
15. They (not/to go) to bed late, because they (to get up) very early every day.

Present Tense Continuous

Timput prezent – aspectul continuu

Example

Forma afirmativă*	Forma negativă*	Forma interogativă
I am working.	I am not working.	Am I working?
You are working.	You are not working.	Are you working?
He is working.	He is not working.	Is he working?
She is working.	She is not working.	Is she working?
It is working.	It is not working.	Is it working?
We are working.	We are not working.	Are we working?
You are working.	You are not working.	Are you working?
They are working.	They are not working.	Are they working?

Formarea Present Tense Continuous:

O formă a prezentului verbului „to be” (am/are/is) + prima formă de bază + terminația „-ing”

* Pot fi folosite și forme prescurtate: I'm = I am; you're = you are; he's = he is; isn't = is not etc.

Exemplu: He is sing ing.
formă a prima formă a terminația
lui „to be” verbului „-ing”

Formare

Elemente specifice de ortografie

- La verbe, care se termină în „-e” mut, dispăre „-e”-ul la forma -ing.
Exemplu: to give – giving
- La verbe care se termină cu „-er”, „-ir”, „-ur” accentuat, se dublează „r” la forma -ing.
Exemplu: to occur – occurring
- La verbe cu vocala scurtă, accentuată (a, e, i, o, u), se dublează consoana care urmează după ele la forma -ing.
Exemplu: to put – putting
- La verbe care se termină cu „-ie”, la forma -ing „-ie” se transformă în „y”.
Exemplu: to lie – lying

Orto-
grafie

Present Tense Continuous se folosește

- în primul rând la acțiuni care se petrec în momentul vorbirii.
Exemplu: He is just watching a film. – El se uită (chiar în acest moment) la un film.

Referințe de timp: at the moment – tocmai (în acest moment)
just (now) – chiar (acum)
right now – tocmai acum
Look ! – iată! (privește!)

Listen ! – fii atent, ascultă!
now – acum

- la acțiuni care sunt executate în prezent, unde momentul vorbirii nu trebuie să fie neapărat implicat.

Exemplu: Mary is writing a book. – M. scrie (în acest moment, în prezent) la o carte.

- la acțiuni viitoare, stabilite deja prin acorduri; semnificația de viitor este clarificată cel mai adesea printr-o determinare temporală.

Exemplu: We are having a party next weekend. – În weekend-ul următor, dăm o petrecere.

- la acțiuni care se petrec repetat, dar numai în cadrul unei perioade de timp limitate.

Exemplu: I am helping him just for this week. – Eu îl ajut numai săptămâna aceasta.

Atenție: Verbele cu semnificație statică și verbele de gândire și recunoaștere (v. pag. 18) nu au forma -ing.

Folosire

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Form the ing-Form. Mind the spelling.

Construiți forma -ing. Atenție la ortografie.**Exemplu:** to make – making

- | | |
|-------------|---------------|
| 1. to leave | 8. to type |
| 2. to ride | 9. to meet |
| 3. to refer | 10. to have |
| 4. to sit | 11. to bring |
| 5. to hide | 12. to get |
| 6. to read | 13. to repair |
| 7. to cook | 14. to come |

II. Put the verbs in brackets in the correct Present Tense Continuous form.

Puneți verbele din paranteze la forma corectă a prezentului continuu.

- We (to discuss) the problem at the moment.
- Look! Carmen (to play) with Susan now.
- The children (to open) their presents right now.
- Listen! The Coopers (to make) a lot of noise again.
- The students (to write) a test now.
- Oliver (to leave) the house at the moment.
- Look! The workers (to clean) the street.
- Susan can't come. She (to telephone) at the moment.
- The sun (to shine) now.
- Look! The cat (to play) with the little ball.
- Officer, I (to watch) the man now.
- The girls (to cut) the film now.
- The teacher (to correct) the tests at the moment.
- She (to go) by bus today.
- My mother (to bake) a cake now.
- At the moment the children (to sleep).
- Listen! Our neighbours (to have) a party.
- Sally can't answer the phone now. She (to wash) her hair.
- Look! Robin (to climb) on the tree.
- We (to have) dinner at the moment.

III. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții.

- Sâmbăta următoare avem un meci de fotbal.
- În momentul de față, fac exerciții pentru lucrarea de control.
- Di Steiger tocmai își repară mașina.
- Tocmai mâncăm de seară.
- Ascultă! Iar latră câinele vecinilor.
- El citește în momentul de față o carte interesantă.
- Tatăl meu lucrează în acest moment în grădină.
- Susan tocmai își vizitează o prietenă.
- Secretara tocmai vorbește la telefon.
- Hai să mergem să înotăm. Soarele strălucește.
- Di Meyer tocmai scrie o scrisoare, iar Dna Meyer tricotează.
- Privește! Vin pompierii.
- Dna Cooper tocmai stă pe balcon și face plajă.
- Muncitorii tocmai construiesc o casă nouă.
- El tocmai fotografiază atracțiile turistice.
- Elevii se află tocmai într-un concurs de citit.
- În momentul de față participăm la un curs de limba franceză.
- Tocmai stă în camera ei și citește.
- Mama tocmai își ceartă fiul, pentru că nu scrie corect.
- El tocmai merge cu câinele la plimbare.

Present Tense Simple and Present Tense Continuous in Contrast

Paralelă între Present Tense Simple și Present Tense Continuous

Paralelă

	Present Tense Simple		Present Tense Continuous	
Formare	Infinitiv, iar la he, she, it + „-(e)s”		am/are/is + infinitiv + „-ing”	
Exemple	I look he looks they look		I am looking he is looking they are looking	
Folosire	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ la stări de durată ▶ la acțiuni repetate regulat ▶ la constatări general valabile ▶ la acțiuni viitoare stabilite printr-un program fix, mer-sul trenurilor ș.a. ▶ la acțiuni petrecute succesiv ▶ la verbe cu înțeles static, verbe care exprimă gândirea și recunoașterea (to be, to belong, to doubt etc.; v. pag.18) 		<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ la acțiuni momentane ▶ la acțiuni care se petrec repetat într-un interval de timp limitat ▶ la acțiuni viitoare deja stabilite 	
Cuvinte de referință	often	adesea	just	tocmai
	usually	de obicei	just now	tocmai acum
	sometimes	câteodată	now	acum
	always	mereu	at the moment	în acest moment
	never	niciodată	Look!	iată! privește
	seldom	arareori	Listen!	ascultă!
	normally	în mod normal	right now	tocmai acum
	every	(în) fiecare	next...	următor/oare
	occasionally	occasional	the following	ce urmează

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

1. Decide whether to use Present Tense Simple or Present Tense Continuous.

Decideți dacă folosiți Present Tense Simple sau Present Tense Continuous.

- Sometimes Susan (to watch) science fiction films, but she normally (to prefer) love stories.
- Look! Mr Cooper (to work). He usually (to start) work at about 8 o'clock.
- We (to go) to a football match next Saturday.
- Can you (to answer) the phone, please, I (to have) a bath right now.
- I never (to eat) spinach, but we (to have) some this evening.
- When I (to see) him, we always (to go) to a pub.
- We usually (to meet) when we (to go) to work.
- Listen! Mrs Jones (to play) the piano. You can (to hear) her very clearly.
- When John (to sleep), he sometimes (to talk).
- Sorry, Mr Smith, I cannot (to speak) to you right now, because I (to be) very busy.
- Paul and Tim (to go) to London three times a year, but next summer they (to stay) at home.
- Occasionally he (to go) to the cinema, but he (to go) to the theatre at least once a week.
- John (not/to be) here, he (to work) late this evening.
- At the moment I (not/to like) fish.
- Peter always (to sing) while he (to have) a bath.
- Look! It (to rain) outside, so we can't (to go) to the beach.
- Susan (to hate) potatoes, because she (to think) they (to be) bad for her.
- I must (to go) home now, because my parents (to wait) for me.
- Sam can't (to go) to Mexico next summer, so he (to visit) his grandmother.
- Mary (to love) chocolate, and she (to eat) some every day.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții.

- Auzi! Dna Simon cântă iar la pian, deși știe că vecina ei este bolnavă și stă la pat.
- Câteodată, bătrâna doamnă nu iese toată ziua din casă, dar azi ea își petrece toată ziua în grădină.
- El își vizitează ocazional fratele în Hampstead, dar altfel nu pleacă des în călătorie.
- Lady Mary își bea ceaiul în fiecare zi la ora 17, dar majordomul Charles este bolnav. De aceea servește Sue ceaiul astăzi.
- Bill tocmai își învață cuvintele la franceză, cu toate că, în mod normal, se joacă afară la această oră, dar mâine are (scrie o) lucrare de control.

6. Iată! Aici în fotografie Susan și Mary tocmai stau la plajă.
7. În prezent, frații mei lucrează în parc, dar nu este decât un „job” de vacanță. Ei frecventează un colegiu, dar au acum vacanță.
8. Dnei Cooper îi place mâncarea italienească, dar în acest moment mănâncă numai fructe și legume pentru că vrea să slăbească.
9. „Ce faci aici la spital?” „Sunt aici cu Sam. Tocmai i se face o radiografie”. (to have an X-ray)
10. Tocmai relatez o cursă de mașini de la Indianapolis. Mașina cu numărul 5 tocmai depășește mașina cu numărul 3. Este o surpriză, deoarece mașina cu numărul 3 câștigă de obicei.

Past Tense Simple

Past Tense - aspectul simplu

Verbe regulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I looked.	I didn't look.	Did I look?
You looked.	You didn't look.	Did you look?
He looked.	He didn't look.	Did he look?
She looked.	She didn't look.	Did she look?
It looked.	It didn't look.	Did it look?
We looked.	We didn't look.	Did we look?
You looked.	You didn't look.	Did you look?
They looked.	They didn't look.	Did they look?

Verbe neregulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I went.	I didn't go.	Did I go?
You went.	You didn't go.	Did you go?
He went.	He didn't go.	Did he go?
She went.	She didn't go.	Did she go?
It went.	It didn't go.	Did it go?
We went.	We didn't go.	Did we go?
You went.	You didn't go.	Did you go?
They went.	They didn't go.	Did they go?

* didn't = did not

Formarea lui Past Tense Simple:

verbe regulate: Forma I a verbului + „-ed”

Exemplu: I looked.

Elemente de ortografie specifice la adăugarea lui „-ed”:

- ▶ Dacă prima formă de bază se termină în „-e”, se adaugă numai „-d”.

Exemplu: like – liked

- ▶ „y” după consoană devine „i”.

Exemplu: tidy – tidied

- ▶ Dacă prima formă de bază se termină în „-er”, „-ir” sau „-ur”, se dublează „-r”.

Exemplu: prefer – preferred

- ▶ O consoană finală simplă se dublează după o vocală (a, e, i, o, u) scurtă, simplă, accentuată.

Exemplu: stop – stopped

verbe neregulate: a doua formă de bază

Exemplu: I went.

Notă:

- ▶ „To be” are două forme de trecut (was/were):

I was	– am fost
you were	– ai fost
he, she, it was	– a fost
we were	– am fost
you were	– ați fost
they were	– au fost

- ▶ „May” formează trecutul cu „was/were allowed to”.

Exemplu: I was allowed to go to the cinema. – Am avut voie/aveam voie să merg la cinema.

- ▶ „Must” formează trecutul cu „had to” (v. și pag.101).

Exemplu: I had to work till 7 p.m. – A trebuit/ trebuia să lucrez până la ora 19.

- ▶ Întrebarea și negația se formează cu „did” + prima formă de bază a verbului.

Exemplu: Did he come yesterday? – A venit el ieri?

No, he didn't come. – Nu, el nu a venit.

Past Tense Simple se folosește

- ▶ pentru acțiuni unice (a), care se succed (b) sau care se repetă (c), începute și încheiate în trecut.

Exemplu: (a) They moved in last week. – Ei s-au mutat săptămâna trecută.

(b) The teacher opened his book and began to read. – Profesorul și-a deschis cartea și a început să citească.

(c) She wrote to him every week. – Ea îi scria în fiecare săptămână.

Formare

Elemente
specifice

Folosire

<i>Cuvinte de referință:</i>	yesterday	– ieri
	(2 months) ago	– acum (2 luni)
	... ago	– în urmă cu ...
	in 1960	– în 1960
	the other day	– mai deunăzi
	the day before yesterday	– alaltăieri
	last (week)	– (săptămâna) trecută
	last ...	– ... trecut/ă

A se lua notă: În limba română în loc de imperfect (trecut) stă adesea perfectul (prezent încheiat).

Exemplu: Am lucrat ieri. (perfect)

în loc de: Lucram ieri. (imperfect)

Traducerea engleză pentru ambele propoziții trebuie să sune așa:

I worked yesterday. Deci: Atenție la traducere!

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Write down the Past Tense Form.

Scriveți forma de Past Tense.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. to occur (a se întâmpla) | 11. to enjoy (a se distra) |
| 2. to come (a veni) | 12. to hear (a auzi) |
| 3. to plan (a planifica) | 13. to listen (a asculta) |
| 4. to give (a da) | 14. to arrive (a sosi) |
| 5. to see (a vedea) | 15. to drink (a bea) |
| 6. to destroy (a distruge) | 16. to put (a pune) |
| 7. to change (a schimba) | 17. to write (a scrie) |
| 8. to apply (a aplica) | 18. to drive (a conduce, a șofa) |
| 9. to paint (a picta) | 19. to read (a citi) |
| 10. to work (a munci) | 20. to understand (a înțelege) |

II. Put the verbs in brackets in the Past Tense. Mind the negative sentences and the questions.

Puneți verbele din paranteză la timpul trecut. Atenție la propozițiile negative și interogative!

1. Last year we (not/to go) on holiday.
2. The Mayers (to go) to Italy last year.
3. She slowly (to get up), (to go) to the door, and (to open) it.

4. Dunlop (to invent) the tyre.

5. When (you/to buy) your new T-shirt?

6. (you/to see) Mary yesterday?

7. How (you/to like) the match last week?

8. Sam (to open) the door and the dog (to begin) to bark.

9. He (to write) his first book when he (to be) 25.

10. Yesterday the alarm clock (to ring) an hour too early, so I (to get) to the office at 8 o'clock.

11. In 1996 Martin (to pass) his exam and (to start) to work as a lawyer.

12. Malcolm X (to be) a famous Civil Rights leader.

13. In 1995 they (to have) a terrible accident. Martha (not/may/to leave) hospital till summer.

14. Some years ago we (to sell) our house in Kingston and (to move) to a better area.

15. When he (to be) 6 years old, he (already/can/to play) the piano.

III. Write a short biography of George Washington.

Scriveți o scurtă biografie a lui George Washington.

- 1732/Bridges Creek/to be born
- the 1750s/to become/commander-in-chief of Virginia
- 1759/to marry/wealthy young widow
- 1759/people/to elect him/to the Virginia Parliament
- 1774-1775/to be/delegate/to the 1st and 2nd Continental Congress, which/to choose him/commander-in-chief of the Continental Army in the Revolutionary War
- at the battle of Yorktown/he/to defeat/British Army/1781
- 1789 he/to become/1st President of the United States
- he/to keep/America/neutral/during the French Revolution
- the Americans/to elect/him/for a second term of office/1793
- 1799/he/to die/Mount Vernon, Virginia

Past Tense Continuous

Past Tense - aspectul continuu

exemplu

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I was going.	I wasn't* going.	Was I going?
You were going.	You weren't** going.	Were you going?
He was going.	He wasn't going.	Was he going?
She was going.	She wasn't going.	Was she going?
It was going.	It wasn't going.	Was it going?
We were going.	We weren't going.	Were we going?
You were going.	You weren't going.	Were you going?
They were going.	They weren't going.	Were they going?

Formarea Past Tense Continuous:

formare

- O formă de trecut a lui „to be” (was/were) + forma I a verbului + terminația „-ing”

Exemplu: He was read ing.
 formă a lui to be forma I a verbului terminația „-ing”

- Elemente specifice de ortografie ale formei -ing, v. pag. 21

Past Tense Continuous se folosește

folosire

- pentru a defini desfășurarea unei acțiuni la un anumit moment (a) sau în timpul unui interval de timp precis (b) din trecut.

Exemplu: (a) Yesterday at 8 o' clock I was working. – Ieri lucram la ora 8.
 (b) Between 10 o'clock and 11 o'clock we were having a meeting. – Între orele 10 și 11 am avut o ședință.

Alegerea timpului atunci când au loc mai multe acțiuni:

- Dacă au avut loc, în trecut, mai multe acțiuni simultane, se folosește la toate *Past Tense Continuous*.

Exemplu: I was watching TV while Susan was playing cards. – Eu mă uitam la televizor, în timp ce Susan juca cărți.

* wasn't = was not ** weren't = were not

- Dacă au avut loc, în trecut, mai multe acțiuni *successive*, se folosește la toate *Past Tense Simple*.

Exemplu: The doctor looked at Paul, took his temperature and sent him home immediately. – Doctorul l-a privit pe Paul, i-a măsurat temperatura și l-a trimis imediat acasă.

- Dacă o acțiune era deja „în curs de desfășurare”, atunci când a intervenit un eveniment nou, acțiunea mai veche stă la *Past Tense Continuous*, iar acțiunea mai nouă stă la *Past Tense Simple*.

Exemplu: We were lying on the beach, when the accident happened.

Eram întinși la plajă, când s-a petrecut accidentul.

acțiune mai veche

un eveniment nou

De notat: Verbele cu înțeles static și verbele de gândire și recunoaștere (v. pag. 18) nu iau forma -ing.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

- I. Bob's parents were away on holiday, but they came home earlier than expected. Write down what they saw when they came home.

Părinții lui Bob erau plecați în concediu, dar s-au întors pe neașteptate. Scrieți ce au văzut când s-au întors.

- Bob – to dance with Mary
- Peter – to drink father's whisky
- Susan and Mary – to use mother's make-up
- some children – to have a bath in the swimming pool
- the dog – to lie on the most expensive armchair
- Paula – to wear mother's nicest evening dress
- the children – to play father's favourite jazz record
- some hamburgers – to lie on the floor
- three children – to dance on the table
- empty bottles – to lie around everywhere
- Bob – to smoke cigars
- four girls – to play cards on the bed
- the cat – to try escape from the chaos
- the neighbours – to come to complain
- the telephone – to ring

II. Write down what the people were doing at the same time.**Scriveți ce făceau persoanele de mai jos în același timp.****Exemplu:** Bob – to do his homework/Sam – to listen to his records upstairs*While Bob was doing his homework, Sam was listening to his records upstairs.*

1. father – to type a few letters in his study/I – to tidy up the attic
2. the stewardesses – to serve dinner/Mr Scott – to sleep in his chair
3. Mrs Martin – to try to sleep/the children – to make a terrible noise
4. the boys – to play tennis/their mothers – to enjoy a quiet afternoon at home
5. the band – to play on the football field/at the spectators – to wait for the match to start
6. the actors – to practise for the performance/the workers – to decorate the stage
7. my aunt – to talk on the telephone/I – to do all her housework
8. the children – to sleep/their parents – to watch TV
9. Lord and Lady Southerby – to have a tea/their servants – to prepare dinner
10. the patient – to tell his story/the doctor – to look out of the window
11. the reporter – to interview the famous film star Sandy/she – to polish her nails
12. the students – to write their final tests/the teacher – to watch them carefully
13. Mrs Burrell – to do her shopping/Mr Burrell – to collect money for the pools
14. the children – to have lunch at school/Mrs Cooper – to visit a friend of hers
15. the new neighbours – to move in/we – to work in the garden

III. Write down what people were doing when ...**Scriveți ce făceau persoanele menționate când**

1. We – to sleep – when the window suddenly broke.
2. When the two cars crashed, the old lady – to wait – at the traffic lights.
3. The Bakers – to have – tea when the telephone rang.
4. I – to write – a letter to my pen-friend when I suddenly heard a noise.
5. The band – to play – when suddenly the lights went out.
6. We – to drive – along a small country road when suddenly a deer jumped in front of our car.
7. Mrs Cooper – to do – her shopping when she noticed that she had forgotten her purse.
8. Mr Sutton – play – tennis when it started to rain.
9. When Jane arrived home, her friend – to wait – for her in the living-room.
10. When I discovered him, he – to breathe – still.

11. When the police found him, he – to try – to hide in a garage.

12. We – to sit – in the garden when suddenly the door opened.

13. When I came home, my parents – to sleep – already.

14. When the teacher – to explain – the new words, he was suddenly hit on the head by a piece of paper.

15. We – to stand – on the bridge when we suddenly saw a man trying to climb on the railing.

Past Tense Simple and Past Tense Continuous in Contrast**Paralelă între Past Tense Simple și Past Tense Continuous**

	Past Tense Simple	Past Tense Continuous
Formare	Verbe regulate: forma 1 a verbului + „-ed” Verbe neregulate: a 2-a formă a verbului	„was/were” + + forma 1 a verbului + „-ing”
Exemple	I looked he went they went	I was looking he was going they were going
Folosire	Acțiuni, care au început în trecut și sunt încheiate	
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ pentru acțiuni întâmplătoare o dată sau repetat în trecut ▶ pentru acțiuni care au loc succesiv în trecut 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ pentru a defini desfășurarea unei acțiuni într-un anumit moment/interval din trecut ▶ pentru mai multe acțiuni simultane în trecut
	Cuvinte de referință: then - atunci after that - după aceea	Cuvânt de referință: while - în timp ce
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ la un nou eveniment, care întrerupe o acțiune aflată deja în curs de desfășurare (forma -ing) 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ când o acțiune era deja „în curs de desfășurare”, când a intervenit un nou eveniment
	Cuvânt de referință: Suddenly – deodată	Cuvânt de referință: when - când

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put into the correct Past Tense form.

Puneți forma corectă de Past Tense.

1. While Peter and Mary (to lie) beside the swimming-pool, we (to have) a drink at the hotel bar.
2. When I (to walk) down Station Road yesterday, I (to meet) Mr Meyer, an old friend of my father's.
3. While Sue (to get off) the bus, a few rude youngsters (to try) to get in at the same time.
4. I (to want) to visit you yesterday, but you (not/to be) at home. It (to be) at 3 o'clock. What (you/to do) at that time?
5. He (to recognize) me at once, although I (to wear) a scarf around my face.
6. When the old lady (to try) to cross the street, suddenly a car (to come) round the corner and nearly (to hit) her.
7. He (to eat) some sandwiches and then (to help) himself to some biscuits.
8. When my friend (to come) to see me yesterday I (not/can/come) downstairs, because I (to have) a shower.
9. When it (to start) to rain, the children (to try) to put up their tent.
10. He (to climb) through the window, (to switch on) the lights and (to go) into the kitchen.
11. When she (to hear) the terrible news, she (to burst) into tears.
12. While the doctor (to examine) Mr Samson, his wife (to wait) in the waiting-room.
13. Some weeks ago he (to break) his arm, but nevertheless he (to go) to work some days later.
14. What (you/to do) when the robbery (to take place)?
15. While the mechanic (to check) the engine, Sam (to wait) in the little office.
16. We (to watch) TV when it (to start) to rain. So mother (to switch) off the TV, because she (to be) afraid of the lightning.
17. The organizer (to announce) the very famous singer. Some minutes later she (to appear) on the stage.
18. When he (to work) for his company, he (not/to like) his job.
19. Paul (to be) very eager when he was a schoolboy. When his friends (to play), he (to sit) in his room and (to study).
20. Last week we (to visit) friends of ours in the afternoon, then we (to go) to the cinema.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Comisarul a intrat cu străinul în bar și a întrebat: „Ce ați făcut ieri între ora 9 și ora 10?”
2. Străinul a răspuns: „Atunci când s-a petrecut crima, stăteam în bar și jucam cărți cu domnul Doodle.”
3. „V-a mai văzut altcineva?” a vrut comisarul Montag să știe.
4. „În timp ce jucam cărți, ne privea un tânăr, care a stat tot timpul la tejghea.”
5. Comisarul începea să devină nervos.
6. În cele din urmă s-a gândit o clipă și l-a întrebat apoi pe străin: „Ce făcea tânărul în momentul în care ați intrat în bar?”
7. „Atunci când l-am văzut prima dată, stătea în colț și vorbea șoptit cu un chelner.”
8. Montag părea să fie foarte uimit, când a auzit acestea.
9. În timp ce el stătea de vorbă cu străinul, auzi că domnul Doodle vorbea cu chelnerul.
10. Montag nu înțelegea despre ce vorbeau.
11. În timp ce el încă mai încerca să-i înțeleagă pe cei doi, a intrat Inspectorul Datson.
12. Când a văzut ce se întâmpla în bar, se grăbi spre Comisarul Montag.
13. El i-a dat o foaie de hârtie, pe care străinul o recunoscuse imediat.
14. În timp ce Montag privea fix biletul, străinul se gândea cum ar putea să fugă din bar.
15. Când dădu să fugă pe ușă, el a fost arestat de cei doi polițiști, care așteptau afară.

Present Perfect Simple

Present Perfect – aspectul simplu

Verbe regulate

mple

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I have looked.	I haven't looked.	Have I looked?
You have looked.	You haven't looked.	Have you looked?
He has looked.	He hasn't** looked.	Has he looked?
She has looked.	She hasn't looked.	Has she looked?
It has looked.	It hasn't looked.	Has it looked?
We have looked.	We haven't looked.	Have we looked?
You have looked.	You haven't looked.	Have you looked?
They have looked.	They haven't looked.	Have they looked?

Verbe neregulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I have gone.	I haven't gone.	Have I gone?
You have gone.	You haven't gone.	Have you gone?
He has gone.	He hasn't gone.	Has he gone?
She has gone.	She hasn't gone.	Has she gone?
It has gone.	It hasn't gone.	Has he gone?
We have gone.	We haven't gone.	Have we gone?
You have gone.	You haven't gone.	Have you gone?
They have gone.	They haven't gone.	Have they gone?

Formarea timpului Present Perfect Simple

mare

Verbe regulate: „have” – la he, she, it „has” – + forma I a verbului + „-ed”
Exemplu: I have looked.

He has looked.

Elemente specifice de ortografie la adăugarea terminației „-ed” v. la pag. 27.

Verbe neregulate: „have” – la he, she, it „has” + a 3-a formă a verbului
Exemplu: I have gone

He has gone.

* haven't = have not ** hasn't = has not

De notat: În limba engleză *Present Perfect* se formează întotdeauna cu o formă a verbului „have”.

Exemplu: He has run. He has made.

Present Perfect se folosește

- ▶ pentru acțiuni care au început în trecut și au continuitate *până în prezent*
Exemplu: I have known him for 2 years now. – Îl cunosc deja de doi ani.
- ▶ pentru acțiuni *recent încheiate*.
Exemplu: I have just opened the window. – Tocmai am deschis fereastra.
- ▶ pentru acțiuni, care au început în trecut, sunt încheiate și ale căror *efecte* se resimt în prezent; nu interesează momentul desfășurării acțiunii.
Exemplu: Prices have gone up. – Au crescut prețurile.
- ▶ pentru a exprima ceva ce s-a întâmplat *o dată, de mai multe ori sau niciodată înaintea momentului vorbirii*. Nu trebuie să apară nici o indicație referitoare la trecut.
Exemplu: I have never been to Wales. – N-am mai fost niciodată în Wales.

Cuvinte de referință: just*

already*

since

for

till now

up to now

so far

not...yet

ever*

never*

this morning,

year etc.

– tocmai (de-abia trecut)

– deja

– de (moment) din/de la

– de (perioadă de timp)

– până în acest moment

– până în acest moment

– până acum

– încă nu

– vreodată

– niciodată

– azi dimineață, anul acesta etc.

(dar numai dacă momentul zilei/anului a început deja în momentul vorbirii și nu a trecut încă)

De notat: Cuvintele de referință marcate cu * stau în fața verbului predicativ.

Exemplu: I have never seen Big Ben.

Folosire

Exercises

Exerciții

- I. *David is a very good boy. His mother, Mrs Cary, praises him when she talks to her neighbour, Mrs Samuel, whose son Paul seems to be a nuisance. Make up sentences.*

David este un băiat foarte bun. Mama sa, dna Cary, îl laudă când vorbește cu vecina ei, dna Samuel, al cărei fiu pare să fie un dezastru. Formați propoziții.

Exemplu: Mrs C.: David/never/to smoke a single cigarette

David has never smoked a single cigarette.

1. Mrs S: Paul/to smoke/for 4 years
2. Mrs C: David/never/to go to a disco
3. Mrs S: Paul/not to be at home/for 3 nights
4. Mrs C: David/never/to write a bad test
5. Mrs S: Paul/already/to write five bad tests/this year
6. Mrs C: David/never/to go out with girls/so far
7. Mrs S: Paul/to take out two different girls/this week
8. Mrs C: David/to do the shopping for me three times/this week
9. Mrs S: Paul/not to help me with the housework/since my last birthday
10. Mrs C: Yes, David/always/to be a good boy and Paul/always/to cause trouble

- II. *Mary is applying for a holiday job. The boss is interviewing her. You ask the questions.*

Mary solicită o slujbă pe timpul vacanței. Șeful o interviează. Formulați întrebările.

1. you/ever/to work/in your holidays/before?
2. you/ever/to organize/anything special/in school?
3. you/already/to pass/you O-level?
4. since when/you/to be/in Stroud?
5. you/already/to learn/how to type?
6. you/to apply/for another holiday job?
7. you/ever/to have/an interview before?
8. you/already/to ask/your parents?
9. you/ever/to be/abroad?
10. you/ever/to have/any opportunity to practise your German?

- III. *Translate the following sentences.*

Traduceți următoarele propoziții.

1. De când îl cunoști ?
2. El tocmai a închis fereastra.
3. Noi am rezolvat deja cinci exerciții.

4. Ei au mers deja 10 mile.
5. Toată seara n-a vorbit (încă) cu nimeni.
6. N-am mai fost niciodată în Australia.
7. De când are un câine, merge de două ori pe zi la plimbare.
8. Fred n-a citit niciodată din Shakespeare.
9. Nu l-am mai văzut de mult.
10. El tocmai a plecat din birou.
11. Ați fost vreodată la Greenwich pe jos?
12. El are boala asta de doi ani.
13. De patru săptămâni ea n-a făcut nimic pentru școală.
14. Până acum, ea a fost mereu o școlăriță bună.
15. Eu nu am vorbit niciodată până acum cu directorul.
16. De doi ani nu mai vorbește ea cu el.
17. Ai ascultat deja noul disc al lui David Bowie ?
18. Vecina noastră a fost până acum foarte amabilă.
19. De doi ani de zile n-am fost în concediu.
20. De când lucrează la firmă, câștigă mult mai mult.

Present Perfect Continuous

Present Perfect aspectul continuu

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I have been working.	I haven't been working.	Have I been working?
You have been working.	You haven't been working.	Have you been working?
He has been working.	He hasn't been working.	Has he been working?
She has been working.	She hasn't been working.	Has she been working?
It has been working.	It hasn't been working.	Has it been working?
We have been working.	We haven't been working.	Have we been working?
You have been working.	You haven't been working.	Have you been working?
They have been working.	They haven't been working.	Have they been working?

* haven't = have not ** hasn't = has not

GRAMATICA LIMBII ENGLEZE

Formarea timpului Present Perfect Continuous:

- „have” + he, she, it (persoana a 3-a singular) „has” + „been” + forma I a verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: They have been waiting.

- Elemente de ortografie la adăugarea lui „-ing”, v. la pag. 21.
 ► Verbe care nu primesc „-ing”, v. la pag. 18.

Present Perfect Continuous se folosește

- la acțiuni care au început în trecut și *mai durează încă*. În contrast cu Present Perfect Simple, care accentuează *rezultatul* unei acțiuni, Present Perfect Continuous accentuează *durata* unei acțiuni.

Exemplu: I have been working for 2 hours now. – Lucrez deja de două ore.
 (Întrebarea potrivită este: De cât timp ...?)

Dar Present Perfect Simple:

I have already typed five letters. – Am bătut la mașină deja cinci scrisori. (Important este rezultatul.)

Cuvinte de referință: all day/month etc. – toată ziua/luna etc.
 the whole morning etc. – toată dimineața etc.
 how long – cât de mult timp, de când
 since – de/din/de la (moment)
 for – de (durată /perioadă de timp)

- pentru a exprima faptul că o acțiune nu prea îndepărtată în trecut a dus la *urmări* neintenționate în prezent.

Exemplu: I can't dance tonight. My legs are aching. I've been playing football all afternoon. – Astă seară nu pot să dansez. Mă dor picioarele. Am jucat fotbal toată după-amiaza.

Exercises**Exerciții**

- I. Form sentences about what the persons have been doing all day.
Formați propoziții. Ce au făcut persoanele de mai jos toată ziua?

- Simon/to do/crossword puzzles/all day
- Peter and Paul/to play football
- Mother/to work in the house
- I/to be to the swimming pool
- The young children/to play in kindergarten
- The neighbours/to lie in the sun
- Susan/to knit her new pullover

- David/to try to repair his bike
- Grandfather/to sit in his armchair and/to read
- The cat/to chase mice and/to play in the sun

- II. Put the verbs in brackets in the correct Present Perfect form. Use either Present Perfect Simple or Present Perfect Continuous.

Completați cu verbele din paranteză la forma corectă de Present Perfect. Folosiți Present Perfect Simple sau Present Perfect Continuous.

- I (to learn) English for 6 years now.
- We (to live) in the area since 1970.
- He (already/to solve) two crossword puzzles this morning.
- It (to rain) all day.
- I hope you (not/to wait) for him for a long time.
- Charles really looks pale. He (not/to eat) anything today.
- My father (to work) in this company for 2 years now.
- He (to know) Jim for a long time.
- ... you ever (to see) any fish in this river?
- Since when ... you (to sit) here?
- The children can't go out. They (not/to finish) their homework yet.
- My uncle (already/to find) a good new job in the city.
- Mr Cooper (to drive) this car for six months now. He (already/to drive) 40 000 miles.
- You (to tell) me this story twice now, but I (never/to believe) it.
- Michael (to drink) all evening. He (already/to drink) several bottles of beer.
- Mrs Smith (to talk) to Susan all afternoon now. She (not/to talk) to anybody else.
- Sam (just/to clean) his car. It looks like new.
- Michael, you (not/to listen) to me for the last five minutes.
- What a mess! What ... you (to do)?
- The Millers (to take) photos of London all day. They (already/to take) nearly fifty photos.

- III. Translate the sentences. Use the correct Present Perfect form.

Traduceți propozițiile. Folosiți forma corectă de Present Perfect.

- Susan ține regim de trei săptămâni și a slăbit deja 2,5 kg.
- Mr Seller a avut clienți toată dimineața. El a vândut deja două mașini.
- Paul joacă de două ore șah. El n-a mai jucat contra lui Tom până acum.
- Trăiesc de doi ani în SUA și încă nu mi-a fost dor de țară.

5. Mrs Chatter vorbește deja de o jumătate de oră la telefon cu prietena ei. Ea a consumat deja peste 51 pence pentru convorbire.
6. Ce ai făcut toată după-amiaza? M-ai așteptat?
7. Harry economisește de luni de zile pentru o motocicletă. El a economisit deja 100 de lire.
8. Îmi caut ochelarii încă de la ora 10, dar nu i-am găsit.
9. N-am mai fost niciodată în America, dar am citit mult despre această țară.
10. El lucrează deja de cinci ani la această firmă și până acum nu au existat probleme niciodată.
11. Maud stă deja de două ore la masa ei de lucru și n-a răspuns încă la toate întrebările.
12. El joacă de doi ani golf la club și a câștigat deja câteva premii.
13. Ai luat deja micul dejun sau ai dormit până acum?
14. „A fost poștașul deja?” – „Da, ți-am pus corespondența deja pe masa ta de lucru”.
15. El locuiește aici deja de două luni, dar nu și-a găsit încă o slujbă nouă.

Past Tense Simple and Present Perfect Simple in Contrast

Paralelă între Past Tense Simple și Present Perfect Simple

	Past Tense Simple		Present Perfect Simple	
Formare	verbe regulate: forma 1 a verbului + „-ed” verbe neregulate: a 2-a formă a verbului		verbe regulate: „have/has” + forma 1 a verbului + „-ed” verbe neregulate: „have/has” + a 3-a formă a verbului	
Exemple	I looked/went he worked/saw they rushed/came		I have looked/have gone he had worked/has seen they have rushed/have come	
Folosire	► pentru acțiuni succesive sau repetate, care au început în trecut și sunt încheiate		► pentru acțiuni care au început în trecut și ajung până în prezent ► pentru acțiuni care au început în trecut și tocmai s-au încheiat ► pentru acțiuni încheiate în trecut ale căror efecte se manifestă și în prezent ► pentru acțiuni care s-au petrecut o dată, de mai multe ori sau niciodată înaintea momentului vorbirii fără a se menționa timpul	
Cuvinte de referință	yesterday	– ieri	just	– tocmai
	... ago	– acum .../în urmă cu ...	already	– deja
	in 1960	– în 1960	since	– de (moment)/din/de la
	the other day	– de curând	for	– de (perioadă)
	last ...	– ultima ... trecut	till now	– până acum
	etc.		up to now	– până în acest moment
			so far	– până acum
			never	– niciodată
			ever	– vreodată
			not yet	– încă nu
			this morning	– azi dimineată

Pentru folosirea aspectului continuu corespunzător v. p. 30 și 39.

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put the verbs in brackets into Past Tense or Present Perfect.

Puneți verbele din paranteză la Past Tense sau Present Perfect.

- Pauline (not/to see) her mother since she (to arrive) last week.
- Mr Martins (to look at) the new plans yesterday, but he (not/to decide), yet if he will accept them.
- I never (to like) horror films, so I (not/to watch) the one on TV last night.
- My grandfather always (to enjoy) a glass of red wine with his meal, but since he (to have) his heart attack, he (not even/to look at) alcohol any more.
- When the new immigrants (to arrive) in the United States, they often (not/to speak) English.
- Soon after their arrival they (to find out) that they (must/to learn) English immediately.
- Since the days of the American colonies, immigrants (to make) this experience over and over again.
- The same (to be) true of the immigrants of the 1970s, but they (continuously/to try) to learn English ever since they (to land) in America.
- Every group of immigrants (to consider) America as a country of nearly unlimited opportunities.
- Mr Bart (to come) to America 10 years ago and (to live) there ever since.
- Last year he (to get) married and he (already/to teach) his wife some Italian.
- His parents (to visit) him three times, although they (never/to want) to travel across the Atlantic.
- When they first (to see) the Statue of Liberty they (to be) very disappointed.
- Since 1993 they (to visit) their son every year.
- When they (to come) to the party last night, all the other guests (to be) already there.
- We never (to like) wine, but since beer prices (to go up) we also (to stop) drinking beer.
- I (always/to hate) sports and I never (to play) tennis in my life.
- Mrs O'Donovan (to work) in Frankfurt for more than 5 years, but she (not/to visit) the Opera house yet.
- We (to be) very happy when my grandmother (to come) to visit us, but she (to stay) 6 weeks with us now and (to make) trouble since the day she (to arrive).
- (you/really/to enjoy) this show? I never (to see) anything more stupid than that in my whole life.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții.

- Stephen nu este de mult aici, dar a și mâncat trei fripturi.
- Când a venit John prima dată în Germania, nu știa să vorbească nici un cuvânt nemțeste.
- Locuim deja de trei săptămâni în noua noastră casă și încă nu ne-am cunoscut vecinii.
- De când s-a mutat dl Sellers la Hamburg, n-am mai auzit nimic de el.
- Erwin n-a mai fost niciodată în vestul sălbatic.
- Când a ajuns anul trecut la New Mexico, a fost uimit că încă mai existau indieni acolo.
- Acum locuiește deja de opt luni în New Mexico și a și învățat multe cuvinte indiene.
- Când l-am vizitat acum câteva săptămâni, tocmai încerca să converseze cu o bătrână căpetenie.
- Câteva zile mai târziu căpetenia mi-a povestit în limba engleză:
- „Erwin a învățat în cele opt luni, de când a venit aici, mai multe cuvinte de câte am știut eu vreodată.”
- Cu toate că a văzut sute de indieni, nu a întâlnit încă nici un cowboy.
- Când a ajuns el în Vest, credea că acolo trăiau numai cowboy.
- Curând a aflat că existau mai mulți indieni decât cowboy adevărați în New Mexico.
- De la începutul acestui secol numărul indienilor din SUA s-a împătrit (to quadruple).
- Când Columb a descoperit America, 1 milion de indieni trăiau în actualele State Unite ale Americii.
- În următoarele patru secole, numărul lor a devenit din ce în ce mai mic.
- În a doua jumătate a secolului al XIX-lea, numărul lor a atins nivelul cel mai scăzut.
- De atunci numărul indienilor crește continuu.
- În contrast cu acestea, cowboy-ii veritabili aproape că au dispărut.
- În deceniile trecute, tot mai mulți americani albi și-au arătat interesul pentru cultura indiană.

Past Perfect Simple

Past Perfect - aspectul simplu

Verbe regulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I had worked.	I hadn't* worked.	Had I worked?
You had worked.	You hadn't worked.	Had you worked?
He had worked.	He hadn't worked.	Had he worked?
She had worked.	She hadn't worked.	Had she worked?
It had worked.	It hadn't worked.	Had it worked?
We had worked.	We hadn't worked.	Had we worked?
You had worked.	You hadn't worked.	Had you worked?
They had worked.	They hadn't worked.	Had they worked?

Verbe neregulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I had gone.	I hadn't* gone.	Had I gone?
You had gone.	You hadn't gone.	Had you gone?
He had gone.	He hadn't gone.	Had he gone?
She had gone.	She hadn't gone.	Had she gone?
It had gone.	It hadn't gone.	Had it gone?
We had gone.	We hadn't gone.	Had we gone?
You had gone.	You hadn't gone.	Had you gone?
They had gone.	They hadn't gone.	Had they gone?

Formarea timpului Past Perfect Simple

Verbe regulate: „had” + forma I a verbului + „-ed”

Exemplu: I had worked.

Elemente de ortografie în adăugarea lui „-ed” v. p. 27

Verbe neregulate: „had” + a 3-a formă a verbului

Exemplu: I had gone

Notă: în limba engleză Past Perfect se formează numai cu „had”.

* hadn't = had not

Exemplu: I had worked
I had gone.

Past Perfect se folosește

- ▶ pentru acțiuni care la un anumit *moment al trecutului erau* deja încheiate. Acest lucru este marcat fie printr-o a doua acțiune succesivă la Past Tense (a) sau printr-o indicație temporală corespunzătoare (b).

Exemplu la (a): After I had done my homework, I played tennis. –
După ce îmi făcusem lecțiile, am jucat tenis.
(prima acțiune: Past Perfect) (a 2-a acțiune: Past Tense)

Exemplu la (b): By that time he had already left. – Atunci el deja plecase.

- ▶ pentru acțiuni care au început înainte de un anumit *moment în trecut*, care *au durat* până atunci sau chiar după aceea.

Exemplu: They had known each other for a long time when they got married. – Se cunoșteau de mult, când s-au căsătorit.

Past Perfect Continuous

Past Perfect – aspectul continuu

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I had been going.	I hadn't* been going.	Had I been going?
You had been going.	You hadn't been going.	Had you been going?
He had been going.	He hadn't been going.	Had he been going?
She had been going.	She hadn't been going.	Had she been going?
It had been going.	It hadn't been going.	Had it been going?
We had been going.	We hadn't been going.	Had we been going?
You had been going.	You hadn't been going.	Had you been going?
They had been going.	They hadn't been going.	Had they been going?

* hadn't = had not

Formarea timpului Past Perfect Continuous

- „had” + „been” + forma I a verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: I had been going.

I had been smiling.

- Elemente de ortografie la anexe pentru „-ing” v. la p. 21

Past Perfect Continuous se folosește

- la acțiuni, care începuseră înaintea unui anumit *moment în trecut* și au mai durat până la acel moment.

Exemplu: He had been waiting for 10 minutes before she arrived. – El așteptase 10 minute până a venit ea.

Notă: atunci când se folosește, Past Perfect Continuous corespunde unui Present Perfect Continuous, care a glisat spre trecut.

Cuvinte de referință: for – de (o perioadă)
since – de (un moment)/din/de la
how long – cât de (mult timp)

- la acțiuni care începuseră înaintea unui anumit *moment în trecut* și erau terminate cu puțin înainte de acesta.

Exemplu: I had just been watching TV at that time. – În acel moment tocmai mă uitam la televizor.

Exercises**Exerciții**

1. Form sentences. Mind the tenses! The first action gets Past Perfect. the second (later) action Past Tense.

Formați propoziții. Atenție la timpuri! Prima acțiune este la Past Perfect, a doua (ulterioară) la Past Tense.

Exemplu: a) they – to buy a new house

b) to move in

After they had bought a new house, they moved in.

1. a) the children – to tidy up their room
b) to play in the garden
2. a) the tourists – to visit the British Museum
b) to have tea at the Ritz
3. a) the Millers – to have their traditional Christmas dinner
b) to open the parcels

4. a) I – to mix my colours
b) to start to paint
5. a) Mrs Simons – to make the breakfast
b) to call the children
6. a) he – to pass the final exam
b) to go to university
7. a) the vicar – to make his speech
b) they all – to sing a song
8. a) Sally – to take a few lessons in tennis
b) to buy a tennis racket
9. a) he – to be on holiday for 4 weeks
b) to find it difficult to get used to work again
10. a) the employee – to learn English at night school
b) to get a higher position in his firm.

II. Put the verbs in brackets into the correct Past Perfect form.

Completați cu verbele din paranteză la forma corectă de Past Perfect.

1. The boy scout (to walk) for half an hour when it began to rain.
2. When he came home, his mother (already/to lay) the table.
3. When I met you first in 1992, how long ... you (to work) in our firm then?
4. Then we came to the house Mary (to live) in when she was a little girl.
5. How long ... you (to learn) English when you got the job as an interpreter?
6. After the children (to be) in England they were more interested in the English language.
7. Before we decided to spend our holiday in Greece we (to study) all the brochures from the travel agency.
8. After the cleaning lady (to break) the expensive vase she wasn't allowed in Lady Margaret's room any more.
9. Mrs Scott (to have) the letter for some days before she showed it to me.
10. Before Alan started work with that company, he (already/to apply) for many other jobs.
11. After the students (to hear) so much about England they wanted to visit England themselves.
12. She (to take) a sleeping tablet before she went to bed.
13. When we (to finish) our work, we saw that we (to forget) an important part.
14. After the students (to get) their certificates they had a big party.
15. Before she moved to the seaside she (to have) a terrible flat.
16. My father was late yesterday because he (to miss) the bus.
17. When the show was nearly over, Mrs Late ... still (not to arrive).
18. After they (to discover) the burglary they called the police at once.
19. She was sent to hospital immediately after the doctor (to give) her a check-up.
20. Before she had the accident she (to be) a good swimmer.

Past Tense, Present Perfect and Past Perfect – Mixed Exercises Exerciții mixte pentru Past Tense, Present Perfect și Past Perfect

I. Put the verb in brackets into the correct tense.
Completați cu verbele din paranteză la timpul corect.

1. When Roger (to come) home from school, his mother (to wait) for him for almost 2 hours.
2. She asked him: „Why (you/not/to come) earlier? Dinner (to be) ready for over an hour now”.
3. Roger replied: „I (to want) to be punctual, but we (must/to stay) in school longer”.
4. „What (you/to do) that you (must/to stay) so long?” his mother asked.
5. „When the teacher (to come) in, we (to jump) over the tables in our classroom”.
6. „I (not /to hear) such a stupid thing for years”, exclaimed his mother.
7. When Inspector Blockhead (to arrive) at the hotel, he (to find) that a terrible crime (to be committed).
8. He (not/to stand) there long when suddenly one of the guests (to want) to speak to him.
9. He (to say) that he (to watch) TV when suddenly he (to hear) a shot.
10. He (to run) to the window at once and (to see) a woman leaving the hotel in a hurry.
11. She (to wear) a grey fur coat.
12. When the guest (to mention) the grey fur coat, the inspector immediately (to know) who the woman (to be).
13. He (to write) down the address and (to tell) one of the officers to go there directly.
14. The officer (to do) as he (to be told).
15. The inspector (to smile) and (to say): „I’m very happy to say that we (already/to solve) the case”.
16. He added: „I (to have) a feeling that this woman (to be) the murderer from the moment we (to come) here”.
17. This (to be) the first case in over 2 years which Inspector Blockhead (to finish) in such a short time.
18. 2 hours later the officer (to return) with the woman in the grey fur coat.
19. He (to arrest) her while she (to try) to drive to the airport.
20. Inspector Blockhead (to be promoted) and (to be) happy ever since.

II. Translate the following sentences.
Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Când Columb a descoperit America, a crezut că a găsit un drum mai scurt spre India.
2. De atunci ne-am dat seama că se înșelase Columb.
3. După ce au venit primii coloniști în America, ei au început să construiască pretutindeni sate și orașe.
4. De la sfârșitul secolului al XVII-lea până la sfârșitul secolului al XIX-lea a avut loc o permanentă mișcare spre vest.
5. Spre 1890 ultimele mari teritorii libere erau populate.
6. De atunci situația imigranților s-a modificat fundamental.
7. În timp ce în primele decenii ale acestui secol ei au găsit de lucru în centrele industriale, în ultimii ani imigranții au devenit o problemă.
8. Înaintea celui de al 2-lea război mondial, imigranții veneau cu precădere din Europa, dar începând cu anii 50 numărul imigranților din lumea a treia a crescut continuu.
9. În afară de aceasta, numărul imigranților ilegali a crescut în ultima vreme.
10. În 1987 guvernul a început să dea multor imigranți ilegali șansa să devină cetățeni americani (citizens).
11. Niciodată până atunci nu au avut atât de mulți oameni dintr-o dată posibilitatea să devină cetățeni ai Statelor Unite.
12. Când am fost ultima dată în SUA, am aflat că mulți mexicani așteptaseră de ani de zile noua lege.
13. Și în Anglia a crescut numărul imigranților în anii '70 și la începutul anilor '80.
14. În 1986, Guvernul britanic a încercat să oprească afluxul imigranților printr-o nouă lege.
15. De atunci au venit mai puțini imigranți în Marea Britanie.
16. Când el intră, văzu că ceilalți oaspeți mâncaseră toate sandviciurile.
17. Cu toate că se bucurase toată după-amiaza în așteptarea unei fripturi, acum nu putea să mănânce nimic.
18. Gazda (host) îi spuse: „V-am așteptat două ore, dar cum la ora 8 încă nu erați aici, am început să mâncăm.”
19. „Tochmai vorbeam de dvs, când ați intrat pe ușă.”
20. Oaspetele a replicat: „Din păcate n-am putut veni mai devreme, pentru că a trebuit să mai lucrez la birou.”

Future I („Will”-Future) Simple

Viitor I

Exemple	Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
	I will* work.	I won't** work.	Will I work?
	You will work.	You won't work.	Will you work?
	He will work.	He won't work.	Will he work?
	She will work.	She won't work.	Will she work?
	It will work.	It won't work.	Will it work?
	We will work.	We won't work.	Will we work?
	You will work.	You won't work.	Will you work?
	They will work.	They won't work.	Will they work?

Formarea viitorului I:

Formare „will” + forma I a verbului

Exemplu: I will work

Notă: will – voi, vei, va, vom, veți, vor (+ viitor), nu „a dori”
 I will – eu voi ...
 I want – eu doresc

Future I („Will”- Future) se folosește

Folosire ► pentru a exprima *acțiuni viitoare*, pe care vorbitorul nu le poate influența

Exemplu: It will rain tomorrow. – Măine va ploua./...plouă.

► pentru a exprima o *hotărâre*, care a fost luată în momentul vorbirii.

Exemplu: Wait a minute, I'll help you. – Așteaptă o clipă, te voi ajuta/ajut.

► în *propoziția principală a unei fraze -if* (condițională) de tipul I (v. p. 129)

Exemplu: If it rains, we'll stay at home. – Dacă plouă, vom rămâne acasă/rămânem acasă.

► în *presupuneri* asupra unor întâmplări viitoare.

Exemplu: I think Mary will arrive late. – Cred că Mary va sosi târziu.

Cuvinte de referință: next... – următoarea...
 the following... – care urmează...
 in 2010 – în anul 2010
 in 2 weeks etc. – peste 2 săptămâni etc.
 tomorrow – mâine

* will = 'll ** won't = will not

Future I („Will”-Future) Continuous

Viitor I/aspectul continuu

Exemple	Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
	I will* be working.	I won't** be working.	Will I be working?
	You will be working.	You won't be working.	Will you be working?
	He will be working.	He won't be working.	Will he be working?
	She will be working.	She won't be working.	Will she be working?
	It will be working.	It won't be working.	Will it be working?
	We will be working.	We won't be working.	Will we be working?
	You will be working.	You won't be working.	Will you be working?
	They will be working.	They won't be working.	Will they be working?

Formarea timpului Future I Continuous:

„will” + „be” + forma I a verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: I will be working.

Elemente de ortografie a formei -ing v. la p. 21.

Future I Continuous se folosește

► pentru a exprima faptul că un proces *tocmai se va derula* la un moment dat sau într-un anumit interval de timp viitor.

Exemplu: When you are asleep, I'll be sitting in the train. – Când tu dormi, eu voi fi în tren.

► pentru a exprima faptul că o *acțiune viitoare* este considerată foarte sigură sau de la sine înțeleasă.

Exemplu: I'll be seeing Mary tomorrow at the office. – O voi vedea pe Mary (precis) mâine la birou.

Notă: Verbele cu sens static și verbele de gândire și recunoaștere (v. p. 18) nu au forma -ing.

* will = 'll ** won't = will not

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Answer the questions in complete sentences.

Răspundeți la întrebări prin propoziții complete.

Exemplu: When will you leave? (3rd of June)

We will leave on the 3rd of June.

- When will you arrive in New York?
(4th of June, in the evening)
- How many days will you spend there?
(3 days)
- Will you visit the Empire State Building?
(no/not to visit the Empire State Building/but to see the Statue of Liberty)
- Will you stay at the Hilton?
(no/not to stay at the Hilton/but to stay at a cheaper hotel)
- What will you do on the fourth day?
(to fly to Chicago)
- What will you do in Chicago?
(to visit an uncle of mine)
- How many days will you stay in Chicago?
(only 2 days)
- Will you do a lot of sightseeing in Chicago?
(no/not to have time for that)
- Where will you go next?
(to go to L.A. by Greyhound bus)
- Will that be the last part of your journey?
(yes/after that/to return to England)

II. Write down what they will do in complete sentences.

Scrieți în propoziții complete ce vor face ei.

Exemplu: to fly from Frankfurt to London

We will fly from Frankfurt to London.

- to arrive at Heathrow at 10 p.m.
- to take the tube to the city
- to arrive at the George Hotel at about 11 o'clock
- not to go out on the first evening/because/to be tired
- only to have a drink at the hotel bar
- to go to bed at about 12 o'clock
- next morning/to visit Portobello Road Market
- Perhaps/to buy presents to the family

9. to have lunch at a pub

10. in the afternoon/to go shopping in Oxford Street

11. on Sunday morning/to go to Hyde Park and/to listen to the people at Speaker's Corner

12. not to stay there very long/because/to meet some friends at the Park Lane Hotel for tea

13. In the evening/to go to the theatre to see the famous musical „Cats”

14. On Monday morning/to take a boat to Greenwich

15. There/to see the „Cutty Sark” and the Royal Observatory

16. In the afternoon/to go back to London by train

17. to visit the Tower of London and/to admire the famous Crown Jewels

18. Later/to have dinner at Dickens Inn

19. not to have time to stay there very long/because/to return to Germany early the next morning

20. at 8 o'clock/to have to be at the airport

III. The Grays are going to move house next month. They are dreaming of what they'll be doing then. Form sentences.

Familia Gray se mută luna viitoare. Ei visează la ce vor face atunci.

Formați propoziții.

Exemplu: Next month/to sit in our living-room

Next month we will be sitting in our new living-room.

- we/to watch the fire in the new fireplace
- mother/to prepare dinner in her new kitchen
- the cat/to lie in front of the fireplace
- later/to play cards
- our parents/to talk to the new next-door neighbours
- Paul/to help Grandma with the washing-up in the kitchen
- the baby/already/to sleep/upstairs
- on the first Sunday in our new house/we/to have breakfast on the balcony
- Grandma/to sit in her favourite armchair
- we hope/the sun/to shine

IV. Tomorrow at 7 p.m. the famous „Black Cats” band will be on stage. Write down what other people will be doing then.

Mâine la ora 19 celebra formație „The Black Cats” va da un spectacol.

Scrieți ce va face publicul în acest timp.

- Simon and his friends, who are fans of this group, (to sit) on the ground in front of the stage and (to clap).
- The girls (to cry) enthusiastically, because they think the boys of the band are great.

3. Reporters (to try) to get the best photos of the members of the band.
4. The roadies (to work) hard behind the stage.
5. The television broadcasting team (to check) all cameras.
6. The parents (to sit) in front of the TV and (to hope) to see their children in the audience.
7. The hot dog vendors (to prepare) snacks for the interval.
8. Hairdressers (to wait) behind the stage in case they are needed.
9. Technicians (to control) the different connections for the radio stations.
10. Reporters (already/to scribble) down notes for the following day's articles.

„Going to”-Future

Viitorul cu „Going to”

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I am [*] going to arrive.	I am not going to arrive.	Am I going to arrive?
You are [*] going to arrive.	You are not going to arrive.	Are you going to arrive?
He is [*] going to arrive.	He is not going to arrive.	Is he going to arrive?
She is going to arrive.	She is not going to arrive.	Is she going to arrive?
It is going to arrive.	It is not going to arrive.	Is it going to arrive?
We are going to arrive.	We are not going to arrive.	Are we going to arrive?
You are going to arrive.	You are not going to arrive.	Are you going to arrive?
They are going to arrive.	They are not going to arrive.	Are they going to arrive?

Formarea „Going to”-Future:

Forma de prezent a lui „to be” (am/are/is) + „going to” + forma I a verbului

Exemplu: I am going to arrive. – Eu **voi** sosi.

De reținut: „To be going to” + forma I a verbului nu are legătură cu verbul „a merge”.

* În loc de formele „am”, „are”, „is” pot fi folosite formele scurte „'m”, „'re” și „'s”.

„Going to”-Future se folosește

- pentru a exprima o *concluzie logică*.

Exemplu: Billy is coughing. He is going to be ill tomorrow. – Billy tușește. El va fi bolnav mâine.

- pentru a exprima o *intenție*, existentă deja în momentul vorbirii (deci nu o hotărâre spontană ca la viitorul cu „will”).

Exemplu: I am going to bring you the book tonight. – Îți voi aduce cartea astă seară.

Folosire

Present Tense Simple Referring to Future

Present Tense Simple cu sens de viitor

Formele de Present Tense Simple:

I arrive

he arrives

(Exemple complete v. la p. 17).

Exemple

Formarea timpului Present Tense Simple:

forma I a verbului – la he, she, it (a 3-a persoană singular) + „-(e)s”-

Exemplu: I come

he comes

Formare

Present Tense Simple se folosește cu sens de viitor

- pentru a exprima faptul că *procesele sau stările de lucruri* în care sunt implicate persoane sau instituții din exterior sunt *stabilite* (ex. mersul trenurilor, un program).

Exemplu: The new film starts next Friday. – Noul film începe vinerea viitoare.

Folosire

Present Tense Continuous Referring to Future

Present Tense Continuous cu sens de viitor

Formele de Present Tense Continuous:

I am arriving.

He is arriving.

(Exemple amănunțite, ca și elemente de ortografie la anexarea lui „-ing”, v. p. 20).

Exemple

Formarea timpului Present Tense Continuous:

Forma de prezent a lui „to be” (am/are/is) + forma I a verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: He is working.

Present Tense Continuous se folosește cu sens de viitor

- cu verbe care exprimă activități și procese (ex. to arrive, to come, to go, to leave etc.) care au *ceva planificat concret*. (Dacă nu sunt lucruri bine stabilite sau nu s-au făcut pregătiri, se folosește viitorul cu „going to”.)

Exemplu: Sue and Simon are getting married next week. – Sue și Simon se căsătoresc săptămâna viitoare.

Exercises**Exerciții**

- I. Form 8 of Sutton Grammar School are going to have a party tomorrow, but they haven't prepared anything yet. Write down what they are going to do. Use „going to” –Future.
Clasa a 8-a de la Sutton Grammar School are mâine o petrecere, dar copiii-au pregătit încă nimic. Scrieți tot ce vor face ei. Folosiți viitorul cu „going to”.

Exemplu: The party/to start/at 7 p.m.

The party is going to start at 7 p.m.

- The girls/to serve tea and biscuits/first
- Tom/to make a short speech/at 7.15 p.m.
- He/to welcome/the guests of the German exchange programme
- He/to give/a book about Sutton as a present to the speaker of the German class
- At 7.30 p.m./the disco/to start
- The dancing club/to perform/new American dances
- Then/most of the students/to dance
- At 9 p.m./there/to be a break
- They/to show a film/about school life in England to inform their German guests.
- Afterwards/they/to answer questions asked by the German students.

II. Use the correct Future form.**Folosiți forma corectă de viitor.**

- There are a lot of clouds. It (to rain) soon.
- The train to London (to leave) at 5 p.m.
- Next Saturday the band „The Black Spiders” (to be) on stage.
- What (to happen) if the party wins the election?
- This time next week we (to lie) on the beach in Rimini.
- Our best player is ill. Our team (to lose) the match next Friday.
- If I meet him, I (to tell) him.
- We have just decided that we (to go) to Spain for Christmas.
- He has never worked in his life, so he (not/to get) any pension now.
- Judy (to have a party). She has already invited all her friends.
- We don't have to discuss this problem now because I (to see) you tomorrow afternoon.
- Linda (to be) late today. There has been such heavy traffic on the M 25.
- I have to hurry because my plane (to leave) in 1 hour.
- (you/to visit) us tomorrow?
- In 10 years from now we (probably/to be) rich.
- Jerome (never/to marry) Sheila if she doesn't stop talking so much.
- Look at this tree. It (to fall) on the house during the next thunderstorm.
- Grandfather (never/to travel) by plane.
- We (to write) a test tomorrow. It has been announced for over a week now.
- The new job (to be) hard for him, but I'm sure he (to get) used to it soon.

Future II Simple**Viitor II****Verbe regulate**

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă	Exemple
I will have worked.	I won't have worked.	Will I have worked?	
You will have worked.	You won't have worked.	Will you have worked?	
He will have worked.	He won't have worked.	Will he have worked?	
She will have worked.	She won't have worked.	Will she have worked?	
It will have worked.	It won't have worked.	Will it have worked?	
We will have worked.	We won't have worked.	Will we have worked?	
You will have worked.	You won't have worked.	Will you have worked?	
They will have worked.	They won't have worked.	Will they have worked?	

will = 'll won't = will not

GRAMATICA LIMBII ENGLEZE

Verbe neregulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I will* have gone.	I won't** have gone.	Will I have gone?
You will have gone.	You won't have gone.	Will you have gone?
He will have gone.	He won't have gone.	Will he have gone?
She will have gone.	She won't have gone.	Will she have gone?
It will have gone.	It won't have gone.	Will it have gone?
We will have gone.	We won't have gone.	Will we have gone?
You will have gone.	You won't have gone.	Will you have gone?
They will have gone.	They won't have gone.	Will they have gone?

Formarea viitorului II:

Verbe regulate: „will” + „have” + forma I a verbului + „-ed”

Exemplu: I will have finished.

Elemente de ortografie la anexarea „-ed” v. p. 27

Verbe neregulate: „will” + „have” + a 3-a formă a verbului

Exemplu: I will have eaten

Viitorul II se folosește

La acțiuni care *se vor fi întâmplat* într-un anumit moment din viitor. Acest moment este marcat printr-o determinare de timp corespunzătoare cum ar fi:

by ... – (cel târziu) până la

in (ten minutes) – în (zece minute)

next (month) – (luna) următoare

sau este marcată printr-o a doua acțiune introdusă de „by the time ...”

Exemplu: By tomorrow he will have done everything. – Până mâine el va fi făcut tot.

By the time Mary gets home her mother will have finished ironing.

– Până când vine Mary acasă, mama ei va fi călcat rufe deja.

Future II Continuous

Viitor II – aspectul continuu

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I will* have been working.	I won't** have been working.	Will I have been gone?
You will have been working.	You won't have been working.	Will you have been gone?
He will have been working.	He won't have been working.	Will he have been gone?
She will have been working.	She won't have been working.	Will she have been gone?
It will have been working.	It won't have been working.	Will it have been gone?
We will have been working.	We won't have been working.	Will we have been gone?
You will have been working.	You won't have been working.	Will you have been gone?
They will have been working.	They won't have been working.	Will they have been gone?

Exemple

Formarea timpului Future II Continuous:

„will” + „have” + „been” + forma I a verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: I will have been waiting.

Elemente de ortografie la adăugarea lui „-ing” v. p. 21

Formare

Future II Continuous se folosește rar.

El exprimă ca și Future II Simple anterioritate față de un anumit moment din viitor, dar accentuează *durata neîntreruptă* a procesului.

Folosire

Exemplu: By the end of March I will have been working in this firm for two years. – La sfârșitul lui martie se vor împlini doi ani de când lucrez la această firmă.

* will = 'll ** won't = will not

* will = 'll ** won't = will not

Exercises

Exerciții

- I. The Pools are going to go on holiday next Friday. Write down what they will have done before they leave.

Familia Pool pleacă în concediu vinerea viitoare. Scrieți ce vor fi făcui înainte de a pleca.

Exemplu: to shut the windows
They will have shut the windows.

1. to ask their neighbours to keep an eye in their house
2. to give the key to Aunt Mary
3. to take the cat to a pet's home
4. to check the shed door
5. to do all the washing
6. Mrs Pool/to do all the ironing
7. Mr Pool/to check the car
8. to pack the suitcases
9. to buy maps for their route
10. to inform themselves about the country they are going to
11. to water the flowers
12. to pull out the TV plug
13. to turn off the main water tap
14. to put a new film in the camera
15. to take their valuables to the bank

- II. Form sentences using Future II Continuous
Formați propoziții folosind Future II Continuous.

1. By 7 o'clock/ he/to sleep for 10 hours
2. Next month/they/to build/this house for 6 months
3. The dancers/to practise for the show for 4 weeks next weekend
4. In 2005/we/to live in our house for 10 years
5. Next year/they/to play/„The Mousetrap” for 45 years
6. By next Saturday/Jack/to stay with us for 2 weeks
7. By the end of the year/I/to go to this school for 5 years
8. By the end of the term/Simon/to play for this club for 2 years
9. By 7 o'clock my father/to repair/his car/for 5 hours
10. By the end of our journey/we/to travel/for 12 hours

Conditional I Simple

Condițional I

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă	Exemple
I would go.	I wouldn't go.	Would I go?	
You would go.	You wouldn't go.	Would you go?	
He would go.	He wouldn't go.	Would he go?	
She would go.	She wouldn't go.	Would she go?	
It would go.	It wouldn't go.	Would it go?	
We would go.	We wouldn't go.	Would we go?	
You would go.	You wouldn't go.	Would you go?	
They would go.	They wouldn't go.	Would they go?	

Formarea timpului Conditional I Simple:

„would” + forma I a verbului

Exemplu: He would come.

Notează: forma scurtă „'d” pentru „would” este identică cu forma scurtă „'d” pentru „had”. Se poate diferenția numai prin forma care urmează, dacă se referă la „would” sau la „had”:

După „would” urmează forma I a verbului.

Exemplu: I'd go.

După „had” urmează a 3-a formă a verbului.

Exemplu: I'd gone.

Conditional I se folosește

- în propozițiile principale ale frazelor condiționale (propoziții-if) de tipul II (condiție neprobabilă, v. p. 132).

În propozițiile secundare corespunzătoare se folosește Past Tense.

Exemplu: I would make a journey if I won in a lottery.

Conditional I

Past Tense

Aș face o călătorie, dacă aș câștiga la Loto.

- la vorbirea indirectă, dacă verbul introductiv stă la un timp trecut și în vorbirea directă a fost folosit Future I (viitor I, v. și cap. „Reported Speech – Vorbirea indirectă” – p. 86)

Exemplu: Vorbirea directă: Mary said: „I will visit London” – Mary a spus: „Voi vizita Londra”.

* would = 'd ** wouldn't = would not

Vorbirea indirectă: Mary said she would visit London. – Mary a spus că ar vizita Londra.

► în *propoziții principale*. Corespunde condițional-optativului

Exemplu: A cool lemonade would be nice. – Ar fi bună o limonadă rece.

A long rest would do us good. – O pauză lungă ne-ar prinde bine.

► pentru a exprima un comportament tipic din trecut.

Exemplu: She would go to the disco every Saturday. – Ea mergea sâmbăta la discotecă.

► pentru a da expresie unui *refuz din trecut*. (wouldn't)

Exemplu: I told him to come, but he wouldn't. – I-am spus să vină, dar a refuzat.

Conditional I Continuous

Condițional I – aspectul continuu

Exemple

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I would* be going.	I wouldn't** be going.	Would I be going?
You would be going.	You wouldn't be going.	Would you be going?
He would be going.	He wouldn't be going.	Would he be going?
She would be going.	She wouldn't be going.	Would she be going?
It would be going.	It wouldn't be going.	Would it be going?
We would be going.	We wouldn't be going.	Would we be going?
You would be going.	You wouldn't be going.	Would you be going?
They would be going.	They wouldn't be going.	Would they be going?

Formarea lui Conditional I Continuous:

„would” + „be” + forma I a verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: They would be leaving.

Elemente de ortografie la adăugarea „-ing” v. p. 21.

Conditional I Continuous se folosește

ca și Conditional I Simple, când trebuie subliniată *durata* unei acțiuni.

Exemplu: I would be working if I weren't ill. – Aș lucra, dacă n-aș fi bolnav

* would = 'd ** wouldn't = would not

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Put the verbs in brackets into Conditional I.

Completați cu verbele din paranteză la Condițional I.

1. If you wore your coat you (not/to fall) ill so often.
2. ... you (to mind) helping me?
3. I (to like) to introduce you to my uncle.
4. I (to learn) more if I were you.
5. If they lived in London they (to go out) quite regularly.
6. They called the assistant, but he (not/to listen).
7. ... you (to like) an orange-juice?
8. Mr Baker remarked that he (to get) a better job next month.
9. If Susan passed the exam, she (to be able to) work in her uncle's firm.
10. What ... you (to do) if you were in my situation?
11. ... you (to open) the window, please?
12. Only a miracle (to help) him.
13. Some new friends (to make) him feel at home here.
14. If I had enough money I (to buy) that car at once.
15. She tried to open the suitcase, but it (not/to open).

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Aș fi comandat o cameră dublă cu duș.
2. Ai mai dori un ceai?
3. Ai vrea să duci cât mai repede posibil scrisorile la poștă?
4. Pe vremuri tatăl meu mergea în fiecare duminică la clubul său.
5. Gangsterii i-au poruncit să deschidă seiful, dar el i-a refuzat.
6. Dacă eu aș fi tu, l-aș suna imediat la telefon.
7. Te-ar deranja, dacă aș veni cu o oră mai târziu?
8. Domnule ospătar, am dori să plătim.
9. Ai vrea să treci mâine seară pe la mine?
10. El spune că ar zbura săptămâna viitoare la New York.

Conditional II Simple

Condițional II

Verbe regulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I would have worked.	I wouldn't have worked.	Would I have worked?
You would have worked.	You wouldn't have worked.	Would you have worked?
He would have worked.	He wouldn't have worked.	Would he have worked?
She would have worked.	She wouldn't have worked.	Would she have worked?
It would have worked.	It wouldn't have worked.	Would it have worked?
We would have worked.	We wouldn't have worked.	Would we have worked?
You would have worked.	You wouldn't have worked.	Would you have worked?
They would have worked.	They wouldn't have worked.	Would they have worked?

Verbe neregulate

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă	Forma interogativă
I would have gone.	I wouldn't have gone.	Would I have gone?
You would have gone.	You wouldn't have gone.	Would you have gone?
He would have gone.	He wouldn't have gone.	Would he have gone?
She would have gone.	She wouldn't have gone.	Would she have gone?
It would have gone.	It wouldn't have gone.	Would it have gone?
We would have gone.	We wouldn't have gone.	Would we have gone?
You would have gone.	You wouldn't have gone.	Would you have gone?
They would have gone.	They wouldn't have gone.	Would they have gone?

Formarea lui Conditional II Simple :

Verbe regulate: „would” + „have” + forma I a verbului + „-ed”

Exemplu : I would have liked.

Elemente de ortografie la anexarea „-ed” v. p. 27.

În ceea ce privește pericolul de confuzie la folosirea formei scurte „,d” pentru „would”, v. p. 63.

* would = 'd ** wouldn't = would not

Verbe neregulate: „would” + „have” + a 3-a formă a verbului

Exemplu: I would have gone.

Conditional II Simple se folosește

- în propozițiile regente ale frazelor condiționale (propoziții-If) de tipul III (Impossible Condition – condiție imposibilă, v. p. 135). În propozițiile secundare corespunzătoare apare Past Perfect.

Exemplu: If he had worked harder, he would have succeeded.

Past Perfect Condițional II
Dacă el ar fi lucrat mai sârguincios, ar fi avut succes.

- în vorbirea indirectă, când verbul regent stă la un timp trecut și în vorbirea directă a) s-a folosit viitor II sau b), când în propoziții-If s-a folosit Condițional I.

Exemplu: a) Vorbire directă: He said: „I will have gone ...” – El spuse: „Eu voi fi plecat ...”

Vorbire indirectă: He said he would have gone ... – El spuse că ar fi plecat ...

b) Vorbire directă : He said: „If it rained we would stay in.” – El a zis: „Dacă ar ploua, am rămâne acasă.”

Vorbire indirectă: He said if it had rained, they would have stayed in. – El a zis că, dacă ar fi plouat, ei ar fi rămas acasă.

- în propoziții principale, ca și Condițional I, dar referitor la trecut.

Exemplu: I would have gone anyway. – Aș fi plecat oricum.

A cool lemonade would have been nice. – O limonadă rece ar fi fost bună.

Folosire

Conditional II Continuous

Condițional II – aspectul continuu

Exemplu

Propoziția afirmativă	Propoziția negativă	Propoziția interogativă
I would* have been going.	I wouldn't** have been going.	Would I have been going?
You would have been going.	You wouldn't have been going.	Would you have been going?
He would have been going.	He wouldn't have been going.	Would he have been going?
She would have been going.	She wouldn't have been going.	Would she have been going?
It would have been going.	It wouldn't have been going.	Would it have been going?
We would have been going.	We wouldn't have been going.	Would we have been going?
You would have been going.	You wouldn't have been going.	Would you have been going?
They would have been going.	They wouldn't have been going.	Would they have been going?

Formarea lui Conditional II Continuous:

Formare

„would” + „have” + „been” + forma la verbului + „-ing”

Exemplu: I would have been waiting.

Elemente de ortografie la adăugarea „-ing” v. p. 21.

Referitor la pericolul confuziei în folosirea formei scurte „'d” pentru „would” v. p. 63.

Conditional II Continuous se folosește

Folosire

ca și Conditional II Simple, atunci când se accentuează *durata* unei acțiuni.**Exemplu:** I would have been working for two hours if I hadn't been ill.
Aș fi lucrat două ore, dacă n-aș fi fost bolnav.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Put the verbs in brackets into Conditional II.

Completați cu verbele din paranteză la Condițional II.

1. I (to go) to see him at once if I had known about the accident.
2. ... you (to do) this for me if I had asked you?
3. I (to do) it anyway.
4. He said by the 3rd of August he (to stay) in New England for 3 weeks.
5. If the police had come at once, they (to catch) the thief.
6. If the weather had been fine, we (to go) swimming.
7. He (never/to ask) me this question.
8. A long walk (to do) us good.
9. If I only had seen, I (to stop) it.
10. If you had gone there, you (to meet) him.
11. You should have asked Mr Hide. He (to be glad) to be able to help you.
12. Holidays in the South (to be) better for him.
13. That (to be) awfully nice of him.
14. I hoped they (to finish) before their parents got back home.
15. If they had found the person earlier, they (to be able to) save his life.
16. Without a special document we (not to be allowed) to enter.
17. Without a life jacket he (to be drowned).
18. I (to like) to visit Madame Tussaud's, but we hadn't got enough time.
19. My mother (to buy) the pullover for me, but they hadn't got it in the right colour.
20. Mrs Shutter (to paint) the living-room herself, but she broke her leg.

Tabelul de pe pagina următoare prezintă o perspectivă a timpurilor la diateza activă.

* would = 'd ** wouldn't = would not

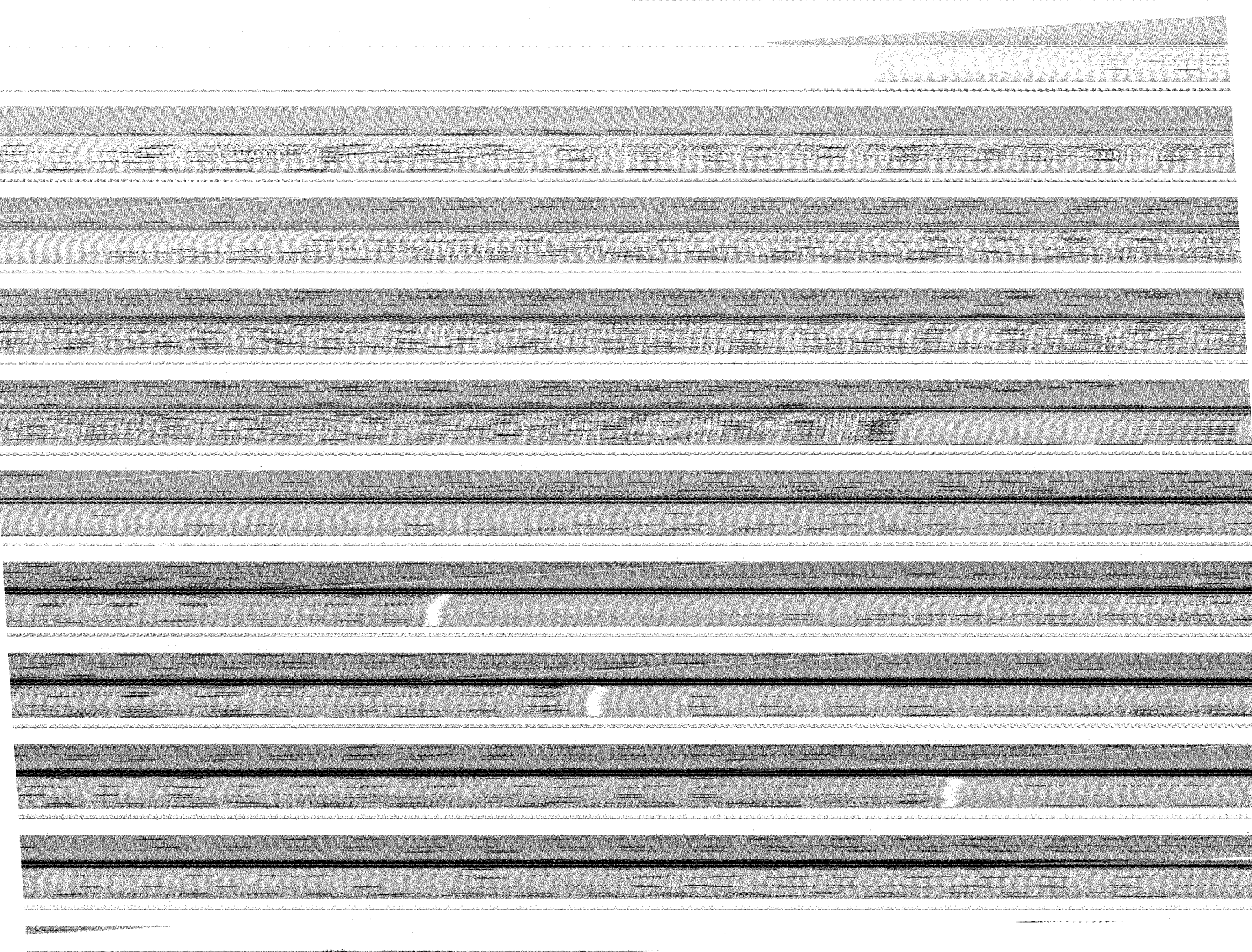
Tabloul de ansamblu al timpurilor – Diateza activă

Termen limba engleză	Termen limba română	Exemplu	Formare	Folosire	Cuvinte de referință
Present Tense Simple	Prezent forma simplă	I work he works	forma 1 a verbului, la he, she, it + „-(e)s”	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ la acțiuni de durată ▶ la acțiuni repetate în mod regulat în prezent ▶ la constatări general valabile ▶ la acțiuni viitoare stabilite deja prin program, mersul trenurilor etc. ▶ la acțiuni care au loc succesiv 	often, seldom, always, never, sometimes, every, normally, usually, occasionally
Present Tense Continuous	Prezent - aspectul continuu	I am working he is working	am/are/is + forma 1 a verbului + „-ing”	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ la acțiuni momentane ▶ la acțiuni viitoare, deja stabilite ▶ la acțiuni care au loc repetat într-o perioadă de timp limitată 	just, just now, now, right now, at the moment, Look!, Listen!, next..., the following
Past Tense Simple	Prezentul simplu (imperfect; perfect compus; perfect simplu)	I worked he worked	<i>verbe regulate:</i> forma 1 a verbului + „-ed”/ <i>verbe neregulate:</i> a 2-a formă a verbului.	▶ la acțiuni care s-au petrecut o dată, repetat sau succesiv, care au început în trecut și sunt încheiate	yesterday, ... ago, in 1960, the other day, the day, before, last ...
Past Tense Continuous	Trecutul - aspectul continuu (imperfect, perfect simplu, perfect compus-) aspectul continuu	I was working he was working	was/ were + forma 1 a verbului + „-ing”	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ pentru a desemna desfășurarea unei acțiuni la un moment dat/ într-o perioadă de timp din trecut ▶ la acțiuni simultane din trecut 	adesea: while, when

Tabloul de ansamblu al timpurilor – Diateza activă

Termen limba engleză	Termen limba română	Exemplu	Formare	Folosire	Cuvinte de referință
Present Perfect Simple	Perfect forma simplă	I have worked he has worked	have/ has + <i>verbe regulate:</i> forma 1 a verbului + „-ed” <i>verbe neregulate:</i> a 3-a formă a verbului	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ pentru acțiuni care au început în trecut și se continuă până în prezent ▶ pentru acțiuni, care au început în trecut și tocmai s-au încheiat ▶ pentru acțiuni ale căror urmări ajung până în prezent ▶ acțiuni care s-au petrecut o dată, de mai multe ori, dar niciodată înaintea momentului vorbirii, fără să se specifice momentul în trecut 	just, already, since, for, till now, up to now, up to the present, so far, never, ever, not yet, this morning, this year*
Present Perfect Continuous	Perfect - aspectul continuu	I have been working he has been working	have/has + been + forma 1 a verbului + „-ing”	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ pentru acțiuni care au început în trecut și mai durează încă (durata acestei acțiuni este subliniată). ▶ pentru a exprima, că o acțiune nu prea îndepărtată în trecut a dus la urmări neprevăzute 	adesea all ..., the whole ..., how long, since, for
Past Perfect Simple	Mai mult ca perfect forma simplă	I had worked he had worked	had + <i>verbe regulate:</i> forma 1 a verbului + „-ed” <i>verbe neregulate:</i> a 3-a formă a verbului	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ pentru acțiuni care erau încheiate la un anumit moment din trecut ▶ pentru acțiuni care au început înaintea unui anumit moment din trecut și durează până în acel moment sau peste el în continuare 	

* dacă încă n-a trecut



Tabloul de ansamblu al timpurilor – Diateza activă

Termen limba engleză	Termen limba română	Exemplu	Formare	Folosire	Cuvinte de referință
Conditional II Simple	Conditional II - aspectul simplu	I would have worked he would have worked	would have + verbe regulate: forma I a verbului + „-ed” verbe neregulate: a 3-a formă a verbului	▲ în propoziții principale la fraza cu If de tip III ▲ la vorbirea indirectă (backshift) pentru Future II ▲ în propoziții principale ca și Conditional I, dar cu referire la trecut	
Conditional II Continuous	Conditional II - aspectul continuu	I would have been working he would have been working	would have been + forma I a verbului + „-ing”	▲ ca și Conditional II Simple, numai că se evidențiază durata	

Final Test: Active Voice

Test Final: Diateza activă – Timpurile

1. Put the verbs in brackets into the correct tense.

Completați cu verbele din paranteză la timpul corespunzător.

- When he (to come) home last night, he (to find out) that his brother (already/to clean) the flat.
- The boss (cannot) believe what he (to see) yesterday morning when he (to enter) the office.
- Everyone (to play cards) and nobody (to work) when he came in.
- As a child he (not to eat) his soup under any circumstances.
- 2 weeks from today he (to be) away for 2 years.
- Joan (not/to come) home since she (to leave) a year ago.
- Jack (to tell) me last Monday that he (to look) after our cat while we (to travel) around England the following week.
- Why ... the sun always (to rise) in the East?
- I (to sit) here all morning and not a single worker (to arrive) up to now.
- Why ... workers nowadays never (to come) when they (to promise) to?
- James (to like) to go on holiday next Christmas, but Lord Nobleton (not to allow) him to go.
- Before Mary (to accept) her new job, she (to work) for General Motors for 15 years.
- ... you ever (to visit) the Great Bazaar in Istanbul?
- Yes, I (to be) there last October and I (to like) to go there again next year.
- We (to see) Mr Smithers only once up to then, but we (to recognize) him at once when he (to come) in last night.
- My husband (not/to sleep) well for almost a year now; so he (to get up) every night.
- While the doctor (to examine) the patient, the nurse (to prepare) the injection.
- I (never/to remember) him if he (not/to help) me last summer.
- There (to be) so many clouds in the sky today that I (to be) sure it (to rain).
- Why ... you (not/to tell) me last Friday that you (never/to see) the Eiffel Tower before you (to come) to Paris?

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții.

1. L-aș vizita cu plăcere, dar el nu m-a mai sunat la telefon de două săptămâni.
2. Când a revenit acum doi ani prima dată după zece ani în Germania, nu mai știa că se circulă pe partea dreaptă a străzii.
3. Când am fost ultima dată la fabrică, munceau toți foarte greu.
4. Dacă n-aș fi fost deja atât de des în Anglia, cu plăcere m-aș mai fi dus o dată la Londra.
5. Când am fost ultima dată la teatru, ne-am întâlnit cu un vechi prieten, pe care nu-l mai văzusem deja de doi ani.
6. La anul, în octombrie, vom împlini douăzeci de ani de căsnicie.
7. Locuim acum de șapte ani în acest apartament. Astăzi nu mai este așa de frumos pe cum era când ne-am mutat.
8. În ultimii doi ani, Virginia a fost tot timpul bolnavă.
9. După ce Sepp a trăit cinci ani în SUA, a fost bucuros că în sfârșit i s-a permis să se întoarcă în Bavaria.
10. Dacă dl O'Neill și-ar fi economisit banii regulat, azi ar fi milionar.
11. După ce Ian a fost jefuit anul trecut în timpul concediului, a zis că n-ar mai veni niciodată în Europa.
12. În timpul ultimei sale șederi, hoții i-au furat ceasul de aur, pe care îl dăduse bunicul său cu ani în urmă.
13. Aaron nu mai voia să se ducă acasă, pentru că se temea de tatăl său.
14. Din păcate nu pot să te vizitez mâine, pentru că de la ora 10 la 12 joc tenis.
15. Când steaua de cinema a intrat pe ușă, o priveau toți de parcă nu o mai văzuseră niciodată o actriță.
16. Oliver tocmai învață limba engleză, cu toate că detestă gramatica.
17. Dl Morris joacă cu fiul său în fiecare sâmbătă fotbal, dar în această sâmbătă nu joacă, pentru că săptămână trecută s-a accidentat.
18. El n-a mai fost în viața lui în străinătate, dar de Crăciun va zbura la Rio.
19. Când au venit pompierii, casa ardea toată deja, cu toate că toți încercaseră să stingă focul (to extinguish).
20. Copil fiind, mi-ar fi plăcut să merg la mare, dar părinții n-ai mergeau în fiecare an la munte.

The Tenses – Passive Voice

Timpurile – Diateza pasivă

La diateza pasivă persoana sau lucrul cu care se întâmplă ceva devin elementul important. Persoana sau lucrul care „suferă”/asupra căruia se răsfrânge acțiunea devine subiect.

Exemplu: *activ:* Poliția prinde hoțul. – The police catch the thief.

pasiv: Hoțul este prins (de poliție). – The thief is caught (by the police).

(Hoțul este persoana care „suferă acțiunea”).

Noțiunea **suferă** poate induce oarecum în eroare. A „suferi” poate foarte bine să fie ceva îmbucurător.

Exemplu: *pasiv:* Elevul este lăudat. – The student is praised.

(„Elevul” este persoana care „suferă”).

Formarea diatezei pasive

În limba engleză diateza pasivă se formează cu o formă a lui „to be” și cu Past Participle (participiul perfect).

Exemplu: Verbe regulate: Paul	is	punished.
	formă a lui „to be”	Past Participle*
Verbe neregulate: Paul	is	driven.
	formă a lui „to be”	Past Participle*

* La verbele regulate Past Participle se termină în „-ed”. La cele neregulate este a 3-a formă a verbului.

Formele lui „to be” se stabilesc în funcție de timp și persoană.

Forme

Simple Forms

Present Tense (prezent)	am/are/is
Past Tense (imperfect sau perfect)	was/were
Present Perfect (perfect)	have/ has been
Past Perfect (mai mult ca perfect)	had been
Future I (viitor I)	will be
Future II (viitor II)	will have been
Conditional I (condițional I)	would be
Conditional II (condițional II)	would have been

Continuous Forms (forme continue)

Present Tense	am/are/is being
Past Tense	was/were being
Celelalte forme – Continuous nu se folosesc la diateza pasivă	

Tabloul de ansamblu al timpurilor – Diateza pasivă

Timpuri	Exemple
Present Tense Simple (prezent simplu)	I am driven you are driven he, she, it is driven we are driven you are driven they are driven
Present Tense Continuous (prezent - aspectul continuu)	I am being driven you are being driven he, she, it is being driven we are being driven you are being driven they are being driven
Past Tense Simple (trecutul simplu)	I was driven you were driven he, she, it was driven we were driven you were driven they were driven

Timpuri

Past Tense Continuous
(trecutul - aspectul continuu)

Exemple

I was being driven
you were being driven
he, she, it was being driven
we were being driven
you were being driven
they were being driven

Present Perfect
(perfect)

I have been driven
you have been driven
he, she, it has been driven
we have been driven
you have been driven
they have been driven

Past Perfect
(mai mult ca perfect)

I had been driven
you had been driven
he, she, it had been driven
we had been driven
you had been driven
they had been driven

Future I
(viitor I)

I will be driven
you will be driven
he, she, it will be driven
we will be driven
you will be driven
they will be driven

Future II
(viitor II)

I will have been driven
you will have been driven
he, she, it will have been driven
we will have been driven
you will have been driven
they will have been driven

Conditional I
(condițional I)

I would be driven
you would be driven
he, she, it would be driven
we would be driven
you would be driven
they would be driven

Conditional II
(condițional II)

I would have been driven
you would have been driven
he, she, it would have been driven
we would have been driven
you would have been driven
they would have been driven

Transforming Active into Passive

Transformarea diatezei active în diateză pasivă

Exemplu: activ:	Mrs Cooper	opened	the tin.
	(subject)	(predicat)	complement)
(Past Tense)	Dna Cooper	a deschis	cutia.
pasiv:	The tin	was opened	by Mrs Cooper.
	(subject)	(predicat)	(complement)
(Past Tense)	Cutia	a fost deschisă	de dna Cooper.

Atenție: La transformarea unei propoziții de la diateza activă la diateza pasivă, (sau invers) subiectul (persoana/lucrul care acționează) și complementul (persoana/lucrul cu care se întâmplă ceva) se schimbă între ele. Se păstrează totuși timpul.

An Active Sentence with Two Objects

O propoziție la diateza activă cu două complemente

O propoziție la diateza activă cu două complemente oferă două propoziții la diateza pasivă. Ambele complemente pot deveni subiecte ale propoziției la pasiv.

Exemplu: activ:	The lady	showed	us	the castle.
	Doamna	ne-a arătat	nouă	castelul.
	subiect	predicat	complement 1	complement 2
pasiv:	We were shown the castle by the lady.			
	Nouă ni s-a arătat castelul de către doamna.			
	subiect 1			
	The castle was shown to us by the lady.			
	Castelul ne-a fost arătat nouă de către doamna.			
	subiect 2			

Notă: complementul indirect este precedat de „to”.

An Active Sentence with a Personal Pronoun as Object

O propoziție la diateza activă cu un complement exprimat prin pronume personal

Exemplu: activ:	Mr Morris took him to the airport.
pasiv:	He was taken to the airport by Mr Morris.

Deoarece subiectul și complementul își schimbă locurile între ele, se modifică și cazul pronumelui personal.

me ↔ I	us ↔ we
him ↔ he	them ↔ they
her ↔ she	

Săgețile duble semnifică faptul că un pronume personal ca subiect al unei propoziții la diateza activă devine complement al propoziției la diateza pasivă și își modifică în această situație cazul.

Exemplu: activ:	He took Peter to hospital.
pasiv:	Peter was taken to hospital by him.

By – Agent – Complementul prepozițional cu „by”

La sfârșitul unei propoziții la diateza pasivă, poate fi numit purtătorul acțiunii (cel care execută ceva) .

Exemplu:	The box was opened by Mr Cooper.
	Cutia a fost deschisă de dl Cooper.

Acest agent este menționat numai când este important pentru enunț. Un agent impersonal, anonim (ca de ex. somebody, people etc.) nu este amintit.

Exemplu: activ :	Someone opened the box.
pasiv:	The box was opened (by someone).

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

- Put into the Passive Voice. (2) means 2 possibilities.
Puneți la diateza pasivă. „(2)” înseamnă două posibilități.
- Simon bought a motorbike last week.
- The boy scouts helped the old lady.
- Mrs Scott will type the letters tomorrow.
- The boys are repairing the bike.
- The best students will win the prize.
- In Austria the people speak German.
- The thieves had stolen a hundred radios and TVs before the police caught them.
- The grocer will send us the drinks tonight. (2).
- They don't sell books any longer.

10. The nurse had told the children a good story. (2)
11. The firm fired the lazy workers.
12. Some days ago our dog bit the postman.
13. Dunlop invented the tyre.
14. After they had mended the engine, they were able to continue their journey.
15. The porters have already carried the suitcases to the taxi.
16. The church gave free soup to the poor. (2)
17. My sister has given me the necklace as a present. (2)
18. The students were making good efforts.
19. They didn't publish the newspaper any longer.
20. The Royal family uses Buckingham Palace as a city residence.

II. Put into the Active Voice.

Puneți la diateza activă:

1. The burglary was discovered by the police.
2. English is spoken in many countries.
3. Mr Carter will be elected.
4. The Tower of London is used as a museum nowadays.
5. This house will be pulled down next year.
6. The old trunk had not been opened before.
7. When Mary came home, the washing-up had already been done by her husband.
8. The meat was being prepared by the cook.
9. Bad weather has been announced by the weather forecast.
10. The Rolls Royce was sold by the Duke.
11. The aerial has been put on the roof by the electrician.
12. This book will be translated by me.
13. The jewellery has been stolen by clever thieves.
14. The town was completely destroyed by an earthquake.
15. The plants have already been watered by Ms Cool.

III. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. La anul va fi deschis noul centru comercial.
2. Premiul ne-a fost înmănat săptămâna trecută.
3. Acum doi ani a fost închisă discoteca, dar ea va fi curând redeschisă de către noul ei proprietar.
4. Satul izolat n-a mai fost călcat niciodată până acum de un străin.
5. Înainte să fi venit el la Londra, firma i-a închiriat o casă.

The Passive Infinitive – Present Tense Form

Diateza pasivă - infinitiv prezent

Construirea formei de Present Tense

Verbe regulate: „to be” + forma 1 a verbului + „-ed”

Exemplu: (to) be invited – a fi invitat

Verbe neregulate: „(to) be” + a 3-a formă a verbului

Exemplu: (to) be shown – a fi expus/arătat

Exemplu: This letter must be written at once.

Această scrisoare trebuie scrisă imediat.

Pentru folosirea lui Passive Infinitive la forma de prezent, de văzut și Passive Infinitive la forma de perfect.

The Passive Infinitive – Present Perfect Form

Diateza pasivă – infinitiv perfect

Construirea formei de Present Perfect:

Verbe regulate: „(to) have been” + forma 1 a verbului + „-ed”

Exemplu: (to) have been invited – a fi fost invitat

Exemplu: This ought to have been discussed earlier. – Acest lucru ar fi trebuit să fie discutat mai devreme.

Verbe neregulate: „(to) have been” + a 3-a formă a verbului

Exemplu: (to) have been shown – a fi fost arătat

Notă: Forma de perfect a lui Passive Infinitive este folosită pentru a exprima legătura cu trecutul.

1. A thunderstorm destroyed most of the houses.
2. Nobody understood the explanations.
3. We have to pay the bills.
4. Our hostess offered us a tea and biscuits. (2)
5. We had to learn the poem by heart.
6. Uncle Richard feeds the cat every morning.
7. Lions like meat.
8. Tolstoi wrote „War and Peace”.
9. Some scientists discovered the Egyptian grave last year.
10. Sam told her the secret. (2)
11. People built the castle in the 17th century.
12. You can visit the Museum of London every day except Mondays.
13. Some weeks ago the boss gave Mr Smith notice.
14. They hadn't looked after the dog properly before it got ill.
15. The housewife hadn't tried the recipe before.

16. You mustn't touch this old vase.
17. Nobody has shown me the document. (2)
18. Will you answer her letter?
19. The friendly gentleman showed us the way. (2)
20. The radio station is just broadcasting an interesting radio play.

II. Transform the sentences from Passive Voice into Active Voice.

Transformați diateza pasivă în diateză activă.

1. The discovery was made yesterday.
2. Two people were killed by a careless driver.
3. This bed hasn't been slept in.
4. They were being laughed at.
5. I was given the opportunity by my boss.
6. The machine is driven by electricity.
7. He was being helped by his son.
8. The books were written by the same author.
9. The population had been warned by the police.
10. He had been rescued by the mountain rescue team.

III. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Asemenea lucruri ar trebui desfășurate.
2. Se spune că el este serios rănit.
3. Greșeala n-a putut fi găsită.
4. Astfel de pălării sunt purtate cel mai adesea de către localnici.
5. Portofelul pierdut a fost găsit de un băiețel.
6. Acum câțiva ani a fost evacuată populația, a fost înălțat un baraj și a fost inundat satul.
7. Despre el se spune că este inteligent.
8. Încălzirea trebuie reparată înainte de venirea iernii.
9. Pivnița ar trebui să fie curățată.
10. I s-a înmănat un premiu.

Reported Speech

Vorbirea indirectă

Vorbirea indirectă se supune unor reguli foarte precise în limba engleză. Folosirea timpurilor în vorbirea indirectă depinde de doi factori:

- ▶ de timpul folosit în propoziția regentă (he says, she asked...)
- ▶ de timpul folosit în vorbirea directă.

No Backshift

Timp nemodificat

Dacă propoziția regentă se află la un timp din grupa prezentului (Present Tense, Present Perfect, Future I), atunci se păstrează timpul din vorbirea directă. Pronumele se schimbă conform sensului, iar verbul se adaptează persoanei (de ex. I have → he has).

Exemplu: Vorbire directă: **He says,** „I worked in London”.

propoziție regentă

Present Tense

propoziție regentă

vorbire directă

Past Tense

vorbire indirectă

Vorbire indirectă: **He says,** **that he worked in London**

Așadar, Past Tense din vorbirea directă se păstrează, deoarece propoziția regentă este la Present Tense.

Backshift

Modificarea timpului

Dacă regenta se află la un timp din grupa trecutului (Past Tense, Past Perfect, Future II, Conditional), atunci timpul din vorbirea directă se modifică după cum urmează:

Vorbirea directă	Vorbirea indirectă
Present Tense	→ Past Tense
He said, „I go ...”	He said that he went ...
Past Tense	→ Past Perfect
He said, „I went ...”	He said that he had gone ...
Present Perfect	→ Past Perfect
He said, „I have gone ...”	He said that he had gone ...
Future I	→ Conditional I
He said, „I will go ...”	He said that he would go ...
Future II	→ Conditional II
He said, „I will have gone ...”	He said that he would have gone ...

Aceleași transformări sunt valabile pentru Continuous Forms (formele continue/forme -ing), dacă propoziția regentă din vorbirea indirectă este la un timp din grupa trecutului.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:*

He said, „I am working ...” (Present Tense Continuous)

Vorbire indirectă:

He said that he was working. (Past Tense Continuous)

Pronumele se modifică conform sensului, iar noua formă verbală se acordă cu noua persoană.

Exceptions: No Backshift**Excepții: fără modificarea timpului**

- Cu toate că propoziția regentă se află la un timp din grupa trecutului, nu intervine o modificare de timp, dacă enunțul este *general valabil* (a) sau *este încă valabil* (b) la momentul relatării.

Exemplu pentru (a): *Vorbire directă:* He said, „Berlin is the capital of Germany”.

Vorbire indirectă: He said that Berlin is the capital of Germany.

Exemplu pentru (b): *Vorbire directă:* He said, „My mother is in hospital”.

Vorbire indirectă: He said that his mother is in hospital.

- Past Perfect, Conditional I și II, should, ought to, might, used to, had better nu se modifică.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He said, „I had gone...”

Vorbire indirectă: He said that he had gone.

Backshift in Connection with Modal Auxiliaries**Modificarea timpului la verbele auxiliare modale**

Unele verbe auxiliare modale se modifică numai în anumite cazuri, chiar dacă propoziția regentă se află la un timp din grupa trecutului.

- „*Could*” se modifică numai când corespunde unei forme de indicativ.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He said, „I could read when I was 5”.

Vorbire indirectă: He said that he had been able to read...

Notă: Deoarece „can” nu poate forma toate timpurile, este nevoie de forme ale verbului înlocuitor „to be able to” (a se vedea și cap. „Auxiliary Verbs” – verbe auxiliare –, v. pag. 95)

- „*Must*” se modifică numai dacă servește la exprimarea unei necesități, care la momentul relatării nu mai acționează.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He said, „I must take the medicine”.

Vorbire indirectă: He said that he had to take the medicine. (La momentul relatării el nu mai trebuie să îl mai ia.)

Notă: Deoarece „must” nu poate forma toate timpurile este nevoie de forme ale verbului înlocuitor „to have to” (v. și cap. „Auxiliary Verbs”, p. 101).

- „*Mustn't*” (a nu avea voie) se modifică numai dacă interdicția nu mai este valabilă la momentul relatării. Atunci este înlocuit cu „wasn't/weren't allowed to” sau „shouldn't”.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* The doctor said, „You mustn't get up”.

Vorbire indirectă: The doctor said that he shouldn't get up. (Dar acum are voie să se scoale.)

- „*Needn't*” (a nu trebui/a nu fi nevoie) se modifică numai dacă absența obligației exprimată prin „needn't” nu mai este valabilă la momentul relatării.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* The teacher said, „You needn't do your homework, because it's your birthday.”

Vorbire indirectă: The teacher said that I didn't have to do my homework, because it was my birthday.

Notă: Deoarece „needn't” nu poate forma toate timpurile, este nevoie de forme ale verbului înlocuitor „not to have to” (v. și cap. „Auxiliary Verbs” – verbe auxiliare, pag 101).

Changes in Time and Place Expressions**Modificări în expresii de timp și loc**

Dacă regenta se află la un timp din grupa trecutului sau dacă datorită schimbării situației de relatat determinările de timp și loc nu mai corespund, atunci trebuie adaptate determinările de timp conform sensului.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He said, „Yesterday I went to the cinema”.

Vorbire indirectă: He said he had gone to the cinema the day before.

Cum se vor schimba expresiile de timp în fiecare caz în parte se poate vedea în tabelul următor:

Vorbirea directă	Vorbirea indirectă
today	that day
yesterday	the day before
... days ago (etc.)	... days before (etc.)
last week (etc.)	the week before (etc.)
next year (etc.)	the following year (etc.)
now	then
tomorrow	the next/following day
here	there
this (pronume demonstrativ)	that
these	those

Different Sentence Types in Reported Speech

Diferite tipuri de propoziții în vorbirea indirectă

Statements – propoziții enunțiative

Regula de bază O propoziție enunțiativă este introdusă în vorbirea indirectă cu „that”. Dar „that” poate fi omis.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He said, „I work in London”.

Vorbire indirectă: He said (that) he worked in London.

Questions – propoziții interogative

Regula de bază O propoziție interogativă este introdusă în vorbirea indirectă prin *adverbul interogativ* corespunzător (de ex. when, where etc.), dacă în vorbirea directă există un adverb interogativ.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He asked, „Where do you live?”

Vorbire indirectă: He asked where I lived.

O propoziție interogativă fără adverb interogativ este introdusă în vorbirea indirectă prin „if” sau „whether”.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* He asks, „Will he come tomorrow?”

Vorbire indirectă: He asks if/whether he will come tomorrow.

Notă: Forma cu „do” nu se mai folosește în propoziția interogativă, decât dacă propoziția este negată. Topica propoziției interogative indirecte este cea a propoziției enunțiative.

Commands – propoziții imperative

Un îndemn indirect se formulează cu „to” sau „not to” + *Infinitiv*. Îndemnurile indirecte nu cad sub incidența regulilor concordanței timpurilor, indiferent la ce timp s-ar afla propoziția regentă.

Exemplu: *Vorbire directă:* Sue told him, „Close the window!”

Vorbire indirectă: Sue told him to close the window.

Vorbire directă: The teacher tells the students, „Don’t talk!”

Vorbire indirectă: The teacher tells the students not to talk.

Mixed Exercises for Reported Speech

Exerciții mixte pentru vorbirea indirectă

I. Put into Reported speech.

Treceți la vorbirea indirectă!

Statements

1. My sister tells me, „I have got a good report”.
2. The boss says, „On Saturday you will all have to come in”.
3. „It’s going to rain”, the speaker says.
4. Mother says, „If the weather is fine, we can have a picnic”.
5. She tells me, „The Millers moved house last week”.

Questions

1. The caretaker wants to know, „Who broke this window?”
2. „When will he arrive?” Grandma asks.
3. „Where do you do your weekly shopping?” the new neighbour asks.
4. The teacher wants to know, „Have you ever been to Hong Kong?”
5. The inspector asks, „Where were you between 6 p.m. and 8 p.m. last Monday?”

Commands

1. „Don’t go out so often!” father tells me.
2. The teacher tells me, „Copy this till tomorrow!”
3. The old lady tells her young neighbour, „Don’t turn your radio on so loud after 10 p.m.!”
4. „Be careful!” the guide tells the visitors.
5. „Do not iron this blouse!” the label tells us.

II. Put into Reported speech. Mind the change of tenses and the changes in time and place.

Treceți la vorbirea indirectă. Atenție la modificările timpurilor și la modificările privind determinările de timp și loc!

Statements

1. The announcer said, „Many houses were destroyed by the thunderstorm, so that the inhabitants were taken to a school building in the next village.”
2. My friend told me, „I'll join the school orchestra as soon as possible.”
3. Our teacher told us, „Next Monday we'll have a meeting for the parents. The headmaster wants to know how many of the parents will come.”
4. „They have been living in this town for many years and I think they will stay here for the next few years”, my brother said.
5. Grandmother told me, „When I was young, we used to walk to school”.
6. The teacher said, „You'll have to hand in the papers tomorrow, because I'm going to correct them over the weekend.”
7. My father remarked, „Somebody seems to be in the living-room, I've just heard a strange noise.”
8. Susan said to her brother, „Next week we'll celebrate our parents' anniversary, I'm planning to buy something really nice for them.”
9. The photographer said, „When I took these photos I didn't know they were going to become such an important proof.”
10. My Indian classmate told me, „In India parents often choose the future husband for their daughter and sometimes they haven't even met before the wedding.”

Questions

1. Maud's parents asked, „When are you going to work harder at school?”
2. The stranger asked, „Can you tell me the way to the station?”
3. The boss asked his employee, „Will you be able to finish these papers till the end of the month?”
4. The teacher asked, „Who can tell where we stopped last lesson?”
5. „For how long have you been a member of the boy scouts?” the new boy wanted to know.
6. The quizmaster asked, „Where and when was Shakespeare born and what are his most famous plays?”
7. Mother asked, „How did you do your maths homework before Dad bought you the calculator?”
8. Mrs Sims asked my mother, „Can you look after my cat while I'm on holiday?”
9. Grandmother asked my mother, „Why do young people always speak so quickly?”
10. „Did Mr Baker call while I was out?” the doctor wanted to know.

Commands

1. The hairdresser told me, „Don't use the hairdrier too often!”
2. The inspector told the policeman, „Find out what happened last night!”
3. Sue told her little brother, „Don't be so rude!”
4. „Mind the gap!” the announcer in the underground station told the passengers.
5. „Stop talking at once!” the teacher told Bob.
6. The sign told the visitors, „Don't feed the animals!”
7. „Take two tablets every morning before breakfast!” the doctor told me.
8. The vet told me, „See me again next Tuesday!”
9. The parents told the children, „Don't play with the video while we are away!”
10. The teacher told us, „Finish the essay till next week!”

III. Put into Reported speech. Mind the changes and the type of sentence. Be careful with the auxiliary verbs!

Treceți la vorbirea indirectă. Urmăriți modificările și felul propoziției. Atenție la verbele auxiliare!

1. The headmaster told me, „Since you were elected, the school magazine has very much improved. I even enjoyed the article about myself.”
2. The Hut family told us, „Our holidays were terrible this year. We only got one hotel room instead of the two we had booked.”
3. The teacher told us, „Water boils at 100°C.”
4. He said, „My parents are on holiday.” (They are still away.)
5. The doctor told me, „You mustn't drink coffee or smoke!” (He is still not allowed to.)
6. The interviewer wanted to know, „When did your pop career start and what are your plans for the future?”
7. One TV reporter said, „Years ago the Thames was so polluted that no fish could live in it.”
8. When I went to the interview for the new job I was asked, „Why have you been out of work for 6 months? Are you not willing to work in a different job than the one you had before?”
9. The pilot said, „That was a near miss! I suddenly saw a plane right in front of me and there was nothing I could do.”
10. The student asked me, „Can you help me please? I've been trying to solve this problem for 20 minutes now.”
11. The stewardess told us, „Fasten your seatbelts and stop smoking.”
12. The notice said, „Anybody who finds the necklace and takes it to the lost property office will get a reward of £ 50.”
13. The teacher asked the new student, „Where did you live before and which school did you do to?”

14. The speaker said, „100 years ago people thought women should look after their children and the house and ought not to take an active part in politics.”
15. Mrs Moore said, „I was driving along a lonely country road when suddenly a shinning circulating object landed right in front of me. I'm sure it was a UFO.”
16. The reporter wanted to know, „How did you feel when your team won the match yesterday?”
17. The politician promised, „If we win the next election, we'll change everything.”
18. My friend said, „I called you at 5 o'clock but you didn't answer the phone, so I couldn't tell you about the ticket.”
19. The weather forecast announced, „There will be little rain in some parts of England in the morning but during the day it'll get dry and sunny.”
20. He asked me, „Can you lend me £ 15? I've forgotten my purse, but I'd like to buy this CD.”

Final Test: Reported Speech

Test

Test final: vorbirea indirectă

I. Put into Reported speech.

Treceți la vorbirea indirectă.

1. The student said, „When the teacher asked me, I was so nervous that I couldn't answer although I knew the correct answer.”
2. The teacher asked us, „Put these 20 sentences into reported speech and learn the new words.”
3. The announcement says, „Due to bad weather conditions the flight to Boston will be delayed.”
4. The receptionist asked, „Would you like a room with a bath or with a shower?”
5. The secretary asked her boss, „Do you want me to phone Moneymaker Ltd. at once?”
6. My aunt says, „Your mother phoned half an hour ago and wanted to know if you were in.”
7. The host family asked Peter, „Have you ever been to England before or is this your first visit?”
8. The guide told us, „This castle belongs to the Duke and it has been opened to the public since 1980.”
9. Carol asks Sabine, „Have you received the postcard I wrote you from Spain?”
10. The teacher explained, „When we go to France, you'll all have to look after your luggage yourselves.”

II. Now try it the other way round. Put into direct speech. Încercați acum și invers. Treceți la vorbirea directă.

1. The shop assistant asked me if I preferred to wait for the alteration or if they should send it to me.
2. My neighbour told me that somebody had been at the door.
3. The ticket collector told us we had the wrong ticket and couldn't take that bus.
4. He asked me when Mrs Kelly would arrive and if he should pick her up.
5. The trainer told the boys to be at the stadium at 8 o'clock.
6. I asked the waitress if they would accept cheques.
7. Grandfather wants to know when dinner is ready.
8. I told him that I had never been abroad before but I would like to go to England.
9. The newspaper said that the concert had been the most interesting part of the programme.
10. The landlord said that I could move in right away.

Auxiliary Verbs

Verbe auxiliare

Grupa verbelor auxiliare se subîmparte, din punct de vedere gramatical, în două categorii:

- ▶ **verbele auxiliare principale (primary auxiliaries):** to be, to do, to have;
- ▶ **verbele auxiliare modale (modal auxiliaries), numite și non-finite,** care pot avea una sau două forme: can, must, may/might, will/would, shall/should, need, ought to, used to.

Primary Auxiliaries

Verbe auxiliare principale

Verbele auxiliare „to be”, „to do”, „to have” pot fi folosite atât ca verbe predicative cât și ca verbe auxiliare. Urmează o privire de ansamblu asupra formelor.

To be – a fi

Present Tense (prezent):

Forme

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă
I am (I'm)	I am not (I'm not)
you are (you're)	you are not (you aren't)
he is (he's)	he is not (he isn't)
she is (she's)	she is not (she isn't)
it is (it's)	it is not (it isn't)
we are (we're)	we are not (we aren't)
you are (you're)	you are not (you aren't)
they are (they're)	they are not (they aren't)

Past Tense (trecut):

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă
I was	I was not (I wasn't)
you were	you were not (you weren't)
he was	he was not (he wasn't)
she was	she was not (she wasn't)
it was	it was not (it wasn't)
we were	we were not (we weren't)
you were	you were not (you weren't)
they were	they were not (they weren't)

Present Participle (forma -ing/participiu prezent): being

Past Participle (participiu perfect): been

Forme de bază: to be (am/are/is) – was/were – been

Funcții

- Ca *verb auxiliar* „to be” ajută la formarea timpurilor compuse.
 - a) „To be” + forma -ing creează diferitele forme de Continuous (aspect continuu).
 - Exemplu:** I am going (Present Tense Continuous)
 - b) „To be” + a 3-a formă a verbului creează diateza pasivă.
 - Exemplu:** It was opened (Past Tense – Passive Voice)
- Ca *verb predicativ* „to be” este un verb al stării sau al relației. El exprimă stare, o însușire sau o relație și apare numai la forma - Simple.
 - Exemplu:** He is a teacher.
 - She is nice.
 - They are my friends.

- „There” + „to be” exprimă existența unui lucru.

Exemplu: There are three books on the desk. – Pe masă există/sunt trei cărți. („There” + „to be” – există.)

- „To be” + *infinitiv cu „to”*, spune că ceva trebuie să se întâmple.

Exemplu: The meeting is to take place in August. – Întâlnirea trebuie să aibă loc în august. („To be” + Infinitiv cu „to” – trebuie.)

To do – a face

Present Tense (prezent):

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă
I do	I do not (I don't)
you do	you do not (you don't)
he does	he does not (he doesn't)
she does	she does not (she doesn't)
it does	it does not (it doesn't)
we do	we do not (we don't)
you do	you do not (you don't)
they do	they do not (they don't)

Forme

Past Tense (trecut):

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă
I did	I did not (I didn't)
you did	you did not (you didn't)
he did	he did not (he didn't)
she did	she did not (she didn't)
it did	it did not (it didn't)
we did	we did not (we didn't)
you did	you did not (you didn't)
they did	they did not (they didn't)

Present Participle (forma -ing/participiu prezent): doing

Past Participle (participiu perfect): done

Forme de bază: to do – did – done

Funcțiile verbului „to do”:

- „To do” poate fi *verb predicativ* și atunci are sensul „a face”, „a rezolva” etc.
- Exemplu:** I do the washing-up. – Eu spăl vasele.

Funcții

- „To do” ca verb auxiliar poate servi la o accentuare și scoatere în evidență a unui enunț.

Exemplu: I did see the UFO. – (Chiar) am văzut OZN-ul.

- „To do” ca *verb auxiliar* se folosește în *răspunsuri scurte* (v. p. 114) și în întrebări disjunctive (v. p. 112), dacă nu există alt verb auxiliar.

Exemplu: You like parties, don't you? Oh yes, I do.

- „To do” ca *verb auxiliar* se folosește la formularea *propozițiilor interogative* și a *propozițiilor negative*, dacă nu există alt verb auxiliar.

Exemplu: Do you like parties? I don't like.

To have – a avea

Present Tense (prezent):

Forme

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă
I have (I've)	I have not (I haven't)
you have (you've)	you have not (you haven't)
he has (he's)	he has not (he hasn't)
she has (she's)	she has not (she hasn't)
it has (it's)	it has not (it hasn't)
we have (we've)	we have not (we haven't)
you have (you've)	you have not (you haven't)
they have (they've)	they have not (they haven't)

Past Tense (trecut):

Forma afirmativă	Forma negativă
I had (I'd)	I had not (I hadn't)
you had (you'd)	you had not (you hadn't)
he had (he'd)	he had not (he hadn't)
she had (she'd)	she had not (she hadn't)
it had (it'd)	it had not (it hadn't)
we had (we'd)	we had not (we hadn't)
you had (you'd)	you had not (you hadn't)
they had (they'd)	they had not (they hadn't)

* „s” poate fi prescurtare pentru „is” sau pentru „has”. Dacă urmează o formă -ing, poate să apară numai pentru „is”, dacă urmează forma a 3-a a verbului nu poate să apară decât pentru „has”.

** „d” poate fi prescurtare pentru „would” și „had”. Dacă urmează un infinitiv, poate să apară numai pentru „would”, dacă urmează forma a 3-a a verbului, poate să apară numai pentru „had”.

Present Participle (forma-ing/participiu prezent): having

Past Participle (participiu perfect): had

Forme de bază: to have – had – had

Funcțiile lui „to have”:

- Ca *verb auxiliar*, „to have” ajută în combinație cu forma a 3-a a verbului la formarea lui Present Perfect, Past Perfect, Future II și Conditional II.

Exemplu: I have seen (Present Perfect)

I had made (Past Perfect)

- Ca *verb predicativ*, „to have” înseamnă „a avea”, „a poseda”. Adesea în engleza britanică se folosește „have got”, așa că întrebările și propozițiile negative nu mai folosesc „do”.

Exemplu: I have got a car.

I haven't got a car.

Have you got a car?

- „To have” apare *împreună cu substantive în unele expresii* care se comportă ca verbe predicative. Ele pot lua și forma Continuous. Întrebările și propozițiile negative se formulează cu „do”. Printre aceste expresii se numără:

to have a party	– a da o petrecere
to have a bath	– a face baie
to have a shower	– a face duș
to have a walk	– a merge la plimbare
to have breakfast	– a lua micul dejun
to have lunch	– a lua masa de prânz
to have dinner	– a lua masa de seară
to have fun	– a se distra
to have a laugh	– a râde
to have a look	– a privi/a arunca o privire

- „To have” + *complement* + a 3-a formă a verbului formează un verb predicativ cu sensul „a pune pe cineva să facă ceva”.

Exemplu: I have my car repaired. – Mi-am reparat mașina.

Modal Auxiliaries

Verbe modale

În limba engleză verbele modale sunt folosite numai ca auxiliare.

Exemplu: He **must** **go** to the office.

verb auxiliar verb predicativ

Numai „need” poate fi folosit ca verb predicativ.

Exemplu: I need a new car. — Am nevoie de o mașină nouă.

Verbele auxiliare incomplete (semiauxiliare) se numesc „incomplete” deoarece au numai o formă de prezent sau de trecut. Formele care lipsesc și infinitivul sunt substituite prin verbe înrudite ca sens sau prin expresii.

Can (to be able to) – a putea

Forme

Formele lui „can”:

+ can/could

- cannot (can't)/could not(couldn't)

„Can” poate forma numai Present Tense (prezent) și Past Tense (imperfect). Pentru alte timpuri (chiar și pentru viitor!) este nevoie de un verb de substituție: to be able to.

Forme ale verbului de substituție:

To be (am/are/is) able to – was able to – been able to

Exemplu: I will be able to speak French in a few years. – Voi fi în stare să vorbesc franceza peste câțiva ani.

Funcțiile lui „can”:

Funcții

- ▶ „Can” exprimă o *abilitate* sau – la forma negată – o *lipsă a abilității*.
Exemplu: He can speak English. – El poate să vorbească limba engleză.
- ▶ „Can” exprimă o *permisiune* sau – la forma negată – o *interdicție*.
Exemplu: You can have my car. – Ai permisiunea să iei mașina mea.
- ▶ „Can” exprimă o *posibilitate* sau – la forma negată – o *imposibilitate*.
Exemplu: That can't be the right number. – Imposibil să fie numărul corect.
- ▶ „Can” exprimă o *presupunere*.
Exemplu: Can the book be on the table? – Poate să fie (oare) cartea pe masă? (Presupun că este pe masă cartea.)

▶ „Can” în propoziții interogative exprimă o *rugămintă*.

Exemplu: Can I open the window? – Pot să deschid fereastra (vă rog)?

▶ „Can't” în propoziții interogative exprimă o *propunere*.

Exemplu: Can't we go swimming? – N-am putea să mergem la înot?
(Ce părere ai de propunerea mea să mergem să înotăm?)

Must (to have to) – a trebui

Forme ale lui „must”:

+ must

- need not (needn't)

„Must” are așadar numai o formă de prezent (Present Tense). Pentru toate celelalte timpuri este nevoie de un verb de substituție: to have to.

Forme ale verbului de substituție:

to have to – had to – had to

Notă: „Must” are o formă negativă „must not (mustn't)”, totuși ea nu înseamnă „a nu avea permisiunea”. Dacă vrem să exprimăm „a nu trebui”, atunci folosim „need not (needn't)” sau „do not (don't) have to”!

Funcțiile lui „must”:

- ▶ „Must” exprimă o *necesitate*, „needn't” exprimă absența unei necesități.
Exemplu: You must work harder. – Tu trebuie să muncești mai serios.
(Este necesar ca tu să lucrezi mai serios.)
You needn't answer. – Tu nu trebuie să răspunzi. (Nu este necesar ca tu să răspunzi.)
- ▶ „Must” exprimă o *presupunere* sau o *concluzie*.
Exemplu: She looks quite old. She must be about 60. – Ea arată cam în vârstă. Ea trebuie să aibă în jur de 60 de ani. (Presupun că ea are cam 60 de ani)
- ▶ „Must” exprimă un *sfat* insistent, un *îndemn*.
Exemplu: You must see the dentist. – Trebuie (chiar ar trebui) să te duci la dentist.

Need – a avea nevoie, a necesita, a trebui

Formele verbului „need”:

+ need

- needn't

„Need” servește la negarea lui „must” și de aceea are același verb înlocuitor: to have to.

Forme

Funcții

Forme

Forme ale verbului de substituție:

to have to – had to – had to

Funcții

- „Need” ca *verb predicativ* exprimă „a avea nevoie”, „a trebui”. Formele interrogativă și negativă se construiesc cu „do”. „Need” ca *verb predicativ* poate forma toate timpurile.

Forme de bază: to need – needed – needed.

Exemplu: I need a bigger flat. – Am nevoie de un apartament mai mare.
I don't need a bigger flat. – Nu am nevoie de un apartament mai mare.

I will need a bigger flat. – Voi avea nevoie de un apartament mai mare.

- „Need” (a avea nevoie, a trebui) există ca *verb auxiliar în întrebări la prezent* (Present Tense questions). Se așteaptă un răspuns negativ.

Exemplu: Need I go at once? – Trebuie să plec imediat?

No, you needn't. – Nu, nu trebuie să faci asta.

- „Need” se mai folosește și *în forma de prezent negativă* (negative Present Tense) ca *verb auxiliar*.

Exemplu: You needn't get up so early. – Nu trebuie să te scoli așa devreme.

May (to be allowed to) – a avea voie, a avea permisiunea etc.**Forme****Forme ale lui „may”:**

+ may/ might

- may not/ might not (mightn't)

„May” are numai o formă de prezent (Present Tense). Forma Past Tense „might” nu exprimă timpul trecut, ci o anumită nesiguranță. Deci pentru toate timpurile se folosește – în afară de prezent – un verb de substituție: to be allowed to.

Forme ale verbului înlocuitor:

To be (am/are/is) allowed to – was/were allowed to – been allowed to

Exemplu: I was allowed to go to the cinema. (Past Tense) – Am avut voie să merg la cinema.

Funcțiile lui „may”:**Funcții**

- „May” exprimă o *permisiune* sau – la forma negativă – o *interdicție*.

Exemplu: You may (not) go out. – (Nu) ai voie să ieși pe afară.

- *Întrebările* cu „may” și „might” cer o *permisiune*, unde „might” sună cât se poate de politicos.

Exem plu: May (might) I open the parcel? – Pot (aș putea) să deschid pachetul?

- „May” și „might” exprimă o *presupunere*, unde „might” accentuează aspectul de nesiguranță.

Exem plu: It may rain. – Poate plouă.

It might rain. – S-ar putea să plouă.

- „Might” în propoziții afirmative exprimă un *îndemn* cu subtonul unei supărări.

Exem plu: You might be in time. – Ai putea și tu să fii (o dată) punctual.

Shall – (a trebui) să, (a fi obligat) să etc.

Forme ale lui „shall”:

+ shall

- shall not (shan't)

Funcții ale lui „shall”:

- *Întrebări* cu „shall” (numai la „I” și „we”) exprimă o *ofertă* sau o *propunere*.

Exemplu: Shall I do this for you? (ofertă) – Să fac asta pentru tine?

Shall we go to the disco? (propunere) – Să mergem la discotecă!?

- În *întrebări* cu „I” și „we”, verbul „shall” poate exprima și o *rugămintă* pentru o *indicație*.

Exemplu: Where shall I put the glasses? – Unde să pun paharele?

- „Shall” exprimă o *promisiune*.

Exemplu: She shall get her share. – Ea își va lua partea.

„Shall” la persoana I singular și plural viitor nu mai este folosit astăzi.

Should/ ought to – ar (trebui), s-ar (cădea) etc.**Forme ale lui „should”/„ought to”:**

+ should/ ought to

- should not (shouldn't)/ought to (oughtn't to)

Funcții ale lui „should”/„ought to”:

- „Should/ought to” exprimă un *sfat*.

Exemplu: I should/ ought to see the doctor. – Ar trebui să merg la doctor.

- „Should/ought to” exprimă o *solicitare* sau o *obligatie*.

Exemplu: He should be put in prison. (solicitare) – El ar trebui băgat la închisoare.

We should ask the old lady if we can help her. (obligatie) – Ar trebui să o întrebăm pe doamna în vârstă, dacă putem să o ajutăm.

- „Should/ought to” exprimă o *probabilitate*.

Exemplu: They should be in New York now. – De fapt, ei ar trebui să fie în New York acum.

„Should” la persoana I singular și plural condițional nu mai este folosit astăzi.

Used to – obișnuit (cu, la, să etc.)

Forme **Forme ale lui „used to”:**

+ used to

- didn't use to sau used not to

„Used to” posedă numai forma de trecut. Formele interogativă și negativă se construiesc de obicei cu „do”; în engleza britanică întrebările și negările pot fi exprimate și fără „do”.

Exemplu: I used to go out very often. (enunțiativă) – Obișnuiam să ies foarte des în oraș.

I didn't use to go out very often.

sau I used not to go out very often. (negare) – Nu obișnuiam să ies foarte des în oraș.

Did you use to go out very often?

sau Used you to go out very often? (întrebare) – Obișnuiați dvs. să ieșiți foarte des în oraș?

Funcții ale lui „used to”:

Funcții „Used to” servește la exprimarea unei *stări anterioare* sau a unei *obișnuințe anterioare*.

Exemplu: There used to be many trees there. – Înainte existau mulți copaci aici.

Will – voi, vei, va, vom, veți, vor; a vrea, a dori

Forme **Formele lui „will”:**

+ will ('ll)

- will not (won't)

Funcțiile lui „will”:

Funcții ► „Will” servește la formularea *timpurilor viitorului*.

Exemplu: I will come. (viitor I) – Eu voi veni.

► „Will” exprimă o *rugămintă*.

Exemplu: Will you please pass me the sugar? – Vrei, te rog, să-mi dai zahărul?

- „Will” exprimă o *ofertă*.

Exemplu: Will you have another cup of tea? – Mai dorești o ceașcă de ceai?

- „Will” exprimă o *poruncă*.

Exemplu: Campers will leave the place tidy. – Cei care campează să lase locul curat.

- „Will” exprimă o *presupunere*.

Exemplu: The phone is ringing. That will be my mother. – Sună telefonul. Trebuie să fie mama.

- „Will” la persoana a 3-a poate exprima o *obișnuință* sau *înclinație*.

Exemplu: Mrs Sutton will sit there and talk for hours. – Dna Sutton obișnuiește să stea acolo și să vorbească ore în șir.

- „Will not (won't)” exprimă un *refuz*.

Exemplu: He made a mistake, but he won't admit it. – El a făcut o greșală, dar (pur și simplu) n-o recunoaște.

Would – aș, ai, ar, am, ați, ar; a vrea, a dori

Forme ale lui „would”:

+ would ('d)

- would not (wouldn't)

Funcții ale lui „would”:

- „Would” servește la formarea *condiționalului*.

Exemplu: I would go. (Conditional I) – Aș pleca.

I would have gone. (Conditional II). – Aș fi plecat.

- „Would” exprimă o *rugămintă politicoasă*.

Exemplu: Would you please open the window? – Ai vrea, te rog, să deschizi fereastra?

- „Would” exprimă o *ofertă*.

Exemplu: Would you like a cup of tea? – Ai dori o ceașcă de ceai?

- „Would” exprimă un *comportament tipic în trecut*.

Exemplu: She would telephone me every day. – Ea mă suna de obicei în fiecare zi.

- „Would not (wouldn't)” exprimă un *refuz în trecut*.

Exemplu: She wouldn't listen. – Ea (nici) nu voia să asculte.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții I. Susanne is a German pupil, but she will soon be moving to England with her parents. A lot of things will change then. Form sentences.

Susanne este o elevă germană, dar curând ea se va muta cu părinții în Anglia. Multe lucruri se vor schimba. Formați propoziții.

Exemplu: must go to school by bus

Susanne will have to go to school by bus.

1. must wear a school uniform
2. must stay in school till 5 o'clock
3. cannot have lunch with her family
4. can play games at school in the afternoon
5. mustn't leave the school premises
6. must attend the school assembly
7. needn't do so much homework
8. to have very long holidays
9. must make new friends
10. cannot speak German in class

II. 100 years ago a lot of things were different. Form sentences.

Acum 100 de ani multe lucruri erau altfel. Formați propoziții.

Exemplu: children/can play in the streets

Children could play in the streets.

1. children/can swim in the river
2. many children/must work because the family/need the money
3. mothers/must do the washing by hand
4. women/may not take an active part in politics
5. students/must walk to school
6. fathers/cannot spend Saturdays with their families - they/must go to work
7. the air/to be cleaner
8. people/must spend their free time without TV
9. water/must be carried to the house
10. girls/may not wear trousers

III. Bill likes to show off. Form sentences using the Present Perfect.

Lui Bill îi place să se laude. Formați propoziții în care să folosiți Present Perfect.

Exemplu: may go to the disco since I was 12

I have been allowed to go to the disco since I was 12.

1. can read difficult books since I was 10
2. may go on holiday on my own for 3 years
3. to have a girlfriend for 1 year
4. never/need my father's help
5. never/must repeat a class so far
6. to be given my own money since I was 8
7. always/can do my homework alone
8. to be allowed to drive my father's car for 3 months now
9. never/to have to help my mother in the kitchen
10. to be able to work with a computer for 5 years

IV. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Nu trebuie să mă ajuți, dacă n-ai timp.
2. Artrebui să înveți în fiecare zi 20 de cuvinte.
3. Ai putea să-l întrebi pe fratele tău, dacă pot veni mâine.
4. A trebuit să rămânem mai mult, pentru că a trebuit să facem curat în clasă.
5. În 1960, un muncitor primea de obicei numai \$ 1.20 pe oră.
6. Unde să pun cărțile?
7. Ai putea să-mi faci o favoare?
8. Chiar n-ar trebui să bei atât de mult.
9. De când știe dl Pfeiffer să vorbească așa bine engleza?
10. Din păcate nu pot veni mâine, pentru că trebuie s-o duc pe mama la doctor.
11. Motorul pur și simplu nu pornea.
12. Te-aș ajuta cu plăcere, dacă aș putea.
13. N-am putea merge la cinema?
14. S-ar putea ca la sfârșitul săptămânii s-o vizităm pe mătușa Paula.
15. Ați dori o cameră de o persoană sau de două?
16. Nu ai voie să deschizi pachetul înainte de ziua ta.
17. Dacă puteți să îmi bateți scrisorile de astăzi la mașină, mâine dimineață puteți veni cu o oră mai târziu.
18. Când o să-ți faci odată lecțiile singură?
19. De când el a avut accidentul, nu mai poate merge.
20. Ai vrea, te rog, să-l suni pe doctor și să-l întrebi când pot veni?

„Do” in Questions and in Negative Sentences

Folosirea lui „do” în propoziții interogative și negative

Regula
de bază

Orice propoziție interogativă sau negativă are nevoie, în limba engleză, de un *verb predicativ* (VP), de ex. go, see, eat etc., și de un *verb auxiliar* (VA), de ex. must, can, will etc.

Exemplu: What is he doing?

He cannot speak French.
(VA) (VP) (VA) (VP)

Dacă nu există nici un alt verb auxiliar condiționat de timp sau de sens, trebuie să se folosească o formă a lui „to do”. Deoarece toate timpurile în afară de Present Tense și Past Tense se formează cu verbe auxiliare, formularea lor cu „do” este necesară numai la aceste timpuri.

Exemplu: I like pizza.
Negarea sună: I don't like pizza.
(VA) (VP)
Întrebarea sună: Do you like pizza?
(VA) (VP)

Notă: În formularea cu „do”, „do” indică persoana și timpul. Verbul predicativ stă la infinitiv.

Exemplu: He didn't go. (Past Tense)

Does he go? (Present Tense; persoana a 3-a singular)

„To do” poate fi și verb predicativ. Într-un asemenea caz propoziția negativă sau interogativă poate fi totuși formulată cu „do”. Propoziția respectivă are atunci două forme ale lui „to do”.

Exemplu: I do my homework.
(VP)
Negarea sună: I don't do my homework.
(VA) (VP)
Întrebarea sună: Do you do your homework?
(VA) (VP)

Excepții

Excepții de la formularea cu „do”:

- O întrebare nu se formulează cu „do” atunci când cuvântul interogativ întreabă despre *subiectul* propoziției enunțative. Acest lucru se întâmplă mereu la întrebările cu „who” („cine”) (dar nu când „who” are sensul „pe cine”).

Exemplu: Who wrote this? Mrs Baker wrote this. („Mrs Baker” este subiect) și întrebările cu „which” se pot referi la subiect și nu se formulează cu „do”.

Exemplu: Which car goes fast?

The sports car goes fast. („The sports car” este subiect.)

- Întrebările și propozițiile negative care conțin o formă a lui „to be”, nu se formulează cu „do”.

Exemplu: Enunț: This is my brother.
Negare: This is not my brother.
Întrebare: Is this my brother?

- În propoziții negative nu se folosește „do”, când „not” nu neagă verbul ci un alt cuvânt.

Exemplu: Not everybody liked the book.

Exercises

Exerciții

1. Form negative sentences.

Formați propoziții negative.

1. Bert can speak French fluently.
2. The children like vegetables.
3. I will be able to come tomorrow.
4. He phoned me yesterday.
5. He has already been a good student.
6. I could read and write when I was 5 years old.
7. He had known him before he came to England.
8. Sue is watching TV.
9. The neighbour's boy goes to school by bus.
10. You may open the letter.
11. He came too late yesterday.
12. The children are very polite.
13. The Millers spent their last holiday in Italy.
14. They always go to Italy.
15. I learn my vocabulary every day.
16. Mrs Burl was in London yesterday.
17. I have heard this before.
18. The accident happened at 5 o'clock.
19. You have to pay an entrance fee.
20. Mr Cut works in an office.

11. *Form questions so that the answers fit.*
Formulați întrebări la care să se potrivească răspunsurile.
1. Where ...?
I was born in New York.
 2. When ...?
I was born on the 2nd October, 1965.
 3. Where ...?
I live in Frankfurt.
 4. How long ...?
I have been living in Frankfurt for 6 years.
 5. Where ...?
I lived in Boston.
 6. What ...?
I am a secretary.
 7. Where ...?
I work in an office in Frankfurt.
 8. Where ...?
I went to school in New York and Boston.
 9. Where ...?
My parents live in New York.
 10. How long ...?
I have been working in this firm for 3 years.
 11. ...?
Yes, I like my job very much.
 12. How many ...?
I have two children.
 13. Where ...?
My children go to school in Frankfurt.
 14. ...?
Yes, my wife works in Frankfurt, too.
 15. Where ...?
I learned German at school.
 16. What ...?
In my free time I play tennis.
 17. When ...?
I start work at 7 o'clock in the morning.
 18. When ...?
I get home at 4 o'clock in the afternoon.
 19. ...?
Yes, I like German food very much.
 20. What ...?
My favorite German meal is „Sauerkraut”.

III. *Form questions. Start with the given interrogative pronouns.*
Formulați întrebări. Începeți cu cuvintele interogative date.

1. Last year they opened a new restaurant in Bond Street.
a) when b) where c) what
2. The Carters live in London.
a) who b) where
3. Every Saturday Pit plays football in Kingston.
a) when b) who c) what d) where
4. Mr Cats goes to work by underground.
a) who b) how
5. He has been working hard for this test for 3 months.
a) who b) how long c) how
6. Charlie Chaplin started his career in London.
a) where b) who
7. The students had to look up the new words in the dictionary.
a) where b) who c) what
8. The accident happened at 4 o'clock at the corner of Main Street.
a) what b) where c) when
9. We didn't go out because of rain.
a) why
10. We go to the cinema once a week.
a) how often b) where ... to

IV. *Form questions to which the underlined words are the answer.*
Formulați întrebări la care să se răspundă cu cuvintele subliniate.

1. I usually go to bed at 10 o'clock.
2. I haven't spoken to him for 1 week.
3. 2 weeks ago the famous actor died.
4. He got a brand new bicycle.
5. They built the department store in 1985.
6. She usually prepare dinner at 6 o'clock.
7. The butler led me to Blue Hall.
8. He stopped smoking years ago.
9. The secretary speaks three languages.
10. My sister moved last month.
11. Grandpa drinks a glass of wine every evening.
12. Years ago scientists discovered the grave.
13. He will arrive on Sunday.
14. We stayed at home because Sue was ill.
15. She learned typing at school.
16. The police arrested the burglar.
17. Our neighbours are just painting the house.

V. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Părinții mei nu ies prea des în oraș.
2. Vezi clădirea de vizavi?
3. Tot te mai duci cu bicicleta la lucru?
4. Eu nu locuiesc la München.
5. De ce nu ai venit aseară?
6. Nu am avut timp.
7. Îți place pizza?
8. Ai văzut ieri filmul de la televizor?
9. Nu-l cunosc pe domnul Meier.
10. Unde lucrează tatăl tău?
11. De ce n-o suni pe Mary la telefon?
12. Săptămâna trecută nu și-a vizitat mătușa bolnavă.
13. Ea nu lucrează ordonat.
14. Când te-ai dus ieri la culcare?
15. De ce nu m-ai întrebat săptămâna trecută?

Question Tags

Întrebări disjunctive

Question Tags sunt scurte întrebări despărțite prin virgulă și plasate la sfârșitul unei propoziții. Ele ar corespunde unui „nu-i așa?”, în sensul că vorbitorul așteaptă de la ascultătorul său o confirmare.

Exemplu: Your daughter is 12 years old, isn't she? – Fiica ta are 12 ani, nu-i așa?

Formulare Formularea acestor adaosuri scurte se orientează după trei principii:

Principiul 1:

Subiectul propoziției se reia sub forma unui pronume amplasat în întrebarea scurtă atașată.

Exemplu: Peter is a teacher, isn't he?

Principiul 2:

a) Dacă *propoziția este negativă*, adaosul întrebării nu este negativ.

Exemplu: She **isn't** 12 years old, **is** she?

b) Dacă *propoziția nu este negativă*, adaosul la întrebare este negativ.

Exemplu: She **is** 12 years old, **isn't** she?

Principiul 3:

a) Dacă în propoziție există un *verb auxiliar*, acesta va fi reluat în adaos.

Exemplu: You **can** speak French, **can't** you?

b) Dacă *nu există verb auxiliar* în propoziție, în adaos se folosește o formă a lui „do”. Forma lui „do” se orientează după timpul (Present Tense, Past Tense) și după persoana (de ex. I, you, he, Mary, they etc.) din propoziție.

Exemplu: She **works** in London, **doesn't** she? (Present Tense, 3rd person singular)

You **went** to Spain, **didn't** you? (Past Tense, 2nd person singular)

Este de notat:

▶ Adaosurile scurte din *îndemnuri* se abat de la principii. Ordinele (commands) au ca adaos pe „will”.

Exemplu: Shut the door, will you?

▶ Datorită sensului aproape negativ, *propozițiile cu adverbe restrictive* ca „hardly” (abia), „rarely” (arareori), „seldom” (rar) etc. au adaosuri scurte afirmative.

Exemplu: You **hardly** sleep, do you?

Exercises

Exerciții

Add the correct question tag.

Adăugați întrebarea disjunctivă corectă.

1. Paul answered the phone, ...?
2. You work very hard, ...?
3. Simon is your best friend, ...?
4. Sheila isn't very old, ...?
5. You will come next week, ...?
6. Sally was always a good student, ...?
7. You like ice-cream, ...?
8. The Millers live in Bristol, ...?
9. She didn't write, ...?
10. You have got a car, ...?
11. She has never been in Paris, ...?
12. They never go to the theatre, ...?
13. Sam always knows the correct answer, ...?
14. He will earn a lot of money, ...?

15. She wasn't at home, ...?
16. You don't remember me, ...?
17. She wouldn't go, ...?
18. The children mustn't eat chocolate, ...?
19. They couldn't help you, ...?
20. It might rain, ...?
21. Your brother is older than you, ...?
22. Your mother doesn't work, ...?
23. You can go, ...?
24. You can't speak French, ...?
25. The workers went on strike, ...?
26. Your German is very good, ...?
27. Carlos comes from Spain, ...?
28. The house was built in 1950, ...?
29. Turn off the TV, ...?
30. Your neighbour cuts the grass every week, ...?

Short Answers

Răspunsuri scurte

Deoarece răspunsurile cu „yes” sau „no” nu sunt uzuale în vorbirea obișnuită, se folosesc răspunsurile scurte pentru a evita ca la întrebările decizionale (da/nu) să se reia conținutul întregii propoziții.

Exemplu: Do you live in London? Yes, I do.

Formularea acestor răspunsuri scurte se supune la două reguli:

Regula 1: *Verbul auxiliar* al întrebării se reia în răspunsul scurt.

Exemplu: Can you speak Italian?

Yes, I can.

Regula 2: Dacă răspunsul este „yes”, atunci răspunsul scurt este afirmativ.

Exemplu: Do you like football?

Yes, I do.

Dacă răspunsul este „no”, atunci răspunsul scurt este negativ.

Exemplu: Do you like football?

No, I don't.

Notă: La răspunsurile scurte cu „must”, trebuie să fim atenți la faptul că negația lui „must” este „needn't”.

Exemplu: Must I make the beds now?

No, you needn't.

Exercises

Exerciții

Answer the following questions.

Răspundeți la următoarele întrebări.

1. Can you answer this question? – Yes, ...
2. Is your mother better? – Yes, ...
3. Have you got a house? – Yes, ...
4. Didn't Carol tell you? – No, ...
5. Are Maud and Sally coming? – No, ...
6. Have you heard the news? – Yes, ...
7. Will you go on holiday? – No, ...
8. Wasn't she able to help you? – No, ...
9. Must you work overtime? – No, ...
10. Did you knit the pullover yourself? – No, ...
11. Would you phone her? – Yes, ...
12. Has your father told you? – Yes, ...
13. May Billy climb the tree? – No, ...
14. Had she lived in England before she got married? – No, ...
15. Did Michael do the washing-up? – Yes, ...
16. Was Sally doing her homework, when you saw her? – No, ...
17. Will you be in at 10 o'clock? – No, ...
18. Are you an actor? – No, ...
19. Has your mother got a job? – No, ...
20. Did the guide explained everything to you? – Yes, ...
21. May Tom leave the classroom? – Yes, ...
22. Does your mother like housework? – No, ...
23. Have you ever tried brandy? – No, ...
24. Were you at the club yesterday? – No, ...
25. Shall I open the window? – No, ...
26. Have you seen Mrs Smith? – No, ...
27. Can you tell me the way to the station? – Yes, ...
28. Have you watered the plants? – Yes, ...
29. Do you believe in UFOs? – No, ...
30. Did your brother give you the book? – Yes, ...

Final Test: Auxiliary Verbs

Test final: verbe auxiliare

I. Put the auxiliaries in brackets in the correct tense.

Completați cu verbele auxiliare din paranteză la timpurile corecte.

1. Clare (can) play the piano when she was 5.
2. Stephen hopes that he (can) translate the English instruction manuals after the English course.
3. The Hulls (must) get up very early tomorrow.
4. Sally (may not) go out when she was 16.
5. Clara (never/to be) to England.
6. I (need not) go to the office yesterday.
7. When I was 17 I (cannot) afford such expensive hobbies.
8. He (never/can) write properly.
9. I (have not) a car.
10. We (must) move because my father got a new job.
11. If you go on learning you (can) go to university next year.
12. Bill (may not) go to the party next weekend.
13. She (to be) a very pretty girl when she was young.
14. You spent 4 years in France, (do not) you?
15. Sam told me that he (must) to go to hospital the day before.
16. Restaurants (not to be allowed to) serve alcohol if they are not fully licensed.
17. I hope you (not to have to) go to work next Saturday.
18. In India some women (not to be allowed) to leave the house.
19. Yesterday we (must) call the doctor because Jean (to be) so ill.
20. I'm sorry, I (cannot) visit you next month.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții :

1. Ai putea să-mi împrumuți, te rog, creionul?
2. Îmi permiteți să vi-l prezint pe domnul Müller?
3. Au voie copiii să se joace în grădină?
4. El nu va putea intra în casă, pentru că și-a uitat cheile.
5. Ochelarii tăi nu pot sta pe masă?
6. Ea n-are nevoie să lucreze luni.
7. Nu putem merge la teatru?
8. De când știți să vorbiți franceza?
9. Lui Peter nu-i place muzica clasică, nu-i așa?
10. Îl cunoști pe George Orwell? – Da.
11. El n-a uitat ieri să închidă mașina.

12. Înainte alimentele costau mult mai puțin.

13. Maria speră să poată vorbi în doi ani atât de bine engleza, încât să poată conversa cu turiștii străini în magazinul ei de suveniruri.

14. De două săptămâni (ei) trebuie să-l ducă zilnic pe fiul lor la dentist.

15. Atunci când se intră într-o moschee, pantofii trebuie descălțați.

16. Vecina ta chiar își spală geamurile în fiecare zi?

17. Prietena ta s-a mutat în Spania anul trecut?

18. Acest pulover nu trebuie să fie spălat.

19. Copiii familiei Baker n-au avut voie niciodată (până acum) să dea o petrecere.

20. Să fi putut oare să-mi las pălăria în vagon?

Infinitive and Gerund

Infinitiv și gerunziu

Infinitivul și gerunziul sunt forme non-finite (neconjugate) ale verbului, adică, spre deosebire de formele finite (conjugate) ale verbului, nu sunt determinate prin persoană și timp.

Infinitive

Infinitiv/formă de bază

Forme

Timp	Activ	Pasiv
Present Tense Simple	(to) write	(to) be written
Present Tense Continuous	(to) be writing	
Present Perfect Simple	(to) have written	(to) have been written
Present Perfect Continuous	(to) have been writing	

Formele de perfect exprimă anterioritate.
Infinitivul poate fi folosit cu sau fără „to”.

The Infinitive without „to” – Infinitivul fără „to”

Folosire

Infinitivul fără „to” se folosește:

- ▶ după *verbele modale* (incomplete) auxiliare (în afară de: ought, used), după verbul auxiliar „do”, după „dare” și „need”.

Exemplu: I must go. – Eu trebuie să plec.

She doesn't work. – Ea nu lucrează.

- ▶ după *expresii* ca: had better
would rather
would sooner
why not
why should we/you (not)

Exemplu: I would rather stay at home. – Aș rămâne mai degrabă acasă.

- ▶ după *verbe care exprimă o percepție senzorială* + complement (de ex. to see, to hear, to feel, to watch), atunci când trebuie să se arate că acțiunea este încheiată.

Exemplu: I saw him enter the house. – L-am văzut cum a intrat în casă.

- ▶ dacă trebuie accentuată desfășurarea unei acțiuni, atunci după *verbe care exprimă percepții senzoriale* se folosește participiul prezent (forma -ing).

Exemplu: I watched him entering the house. – L-am observat cum intra în casă.

- ▶ după „let” + complement (a permite, a accepta).

Exemplu: I let him go. – L-am lăsat să plece.

- ▶ după „let's” (propunere).

Exemplu: Let's go to the pub. – Hai să mergem la bar.

- ▶ după „make” + complement (a determina pe cineva).

Exemplu: He made me stay longer. – El m-a determinat să rămân mai mult.**The Infinitive with „to”- Infinitivul cu „to”**

Folosire

Infinitivul cu „to” poate fi folosit:

- ▶ cu funcția unei *propoziții interogative indirecte* sau a unei *propoziții complementive* adesea după cuvinte interogative sau după „whether/if”, după *verbe care exprimă gândirea, presupunerea, afirmarea* (de ex. to ask, to consider, to decide, to find out, to forget, to know, to learn, to remember, to see, to show, to teach, to wonder etc.).

Exemplu: He didn't know what to do. (He didn't know what he should do.) – El nu știa ce să facă.

- ▶ ca *determinare adverbială* cu funcția unei propoziții finale (de scop) sau a unei propoziții consecutive. Infinitivul cu „to” este așadar ca o prescurtare pentru propoziții secundare, care sunt introduse cu „so that”, „such that”, „in order that” etc.

Exemplu: Fresh air helps the flowers to grow. (Fresh air helps the flowers so that they grow.) – Aerul proaspăt ajută florile să crească.

- ▶ după *verbe ca „to seem”, „to appear”, care au nevoie de un complement.*

Exemplu: She seemed to be at home. – Se părea că ea este acasă.

- ▶ după *verbe care exprimă un îndemn* (în afară de: to make) sau o *încuviințare* (în afară de: to let), ca de ex. to allow, to ask, to cause, to expect, to order, to tell (a porunci), to want etc. + complement.

Exemplu: The teacher allowed him to go. – Profesorul i-a permis să plece.
a vrea ca cineva să... = to want sb. to

După „to want” nu se folosește niciodată „that”, ci infinitivul cu „to”.

Exemplu: I want him to come – Eu aș dori ca el să vină.

Notă: Aceste construcții se numesc ACI (din lat. *accusations cum infinitivo*), așadar acuzativ cu infinitiv. Deoarece în limba engleză nu există de fapt un acuzativ, se folosește și denumirea „Objective Infinitive”. La aceste construcții infinitivale cu complement este de urmărit ca – în cazul în care complementul este un pronume – acesta trebuie să îndeplinească rolul unui complement (object case).

Exemplu: The teacher wants me to work harder.

you
him, her, (it)
us
you
them

- ▶ după *numerale ordinale și superlative*, ca de ex. the first, the second, the last, the next, the only etc.

Exemplu: Miss Gutter was the first to arrive. – Dra Gutter a fost prima care a sosit.

- ▶ după „too” + adjectiv

Exemplu: He is too young to go to the disco. – El este prea tânăr ca să meargă la discotecă.

- ▶ după adjectiv + „enough”

Exemplu: He is old enough to do it himself. – El este destul de mare ca să se descurce (s-o facă) singur.

- ▶ după „for” + complement.

Exemplu: It's easy for him to do that. – Este ușor pentru el să facă acest lucru.

- ▶ după majoritatea *adjectivelor* și *gradelor lor de comparație*.

Exemplu: It's cheaper to go by train. – Este mai ieftin să mergi cu trenul.

- ▶ pentru a exprima un scop.

Exemplu: He must learn hard (in order) to pass his exam. – El trebuie să muncească din greu ca să-și ia examenul.

The Infinitive Passive Voice – Infinitiv pasiv

Regula de bază

La diateza pasivă găsim de obicei și infinitiv pasiv. Este vorba aici de infinitivul cu „to”.

Exemplu: The boys are to be pitied. – Băieții sunt de compătimit.

În ciuda sensului de pasiv, aici se folosește infinitivul activ cu „to”.

Excepții

Adesea după „there” + o formă a lui „to be”.

Exemplu: There are some bills to pay. – Sunt câteva note de plătit.

► după adjective ca „difficult”, „easy”, „hard”, „pleasant”, „nice” etc.

Exemplu: This question is easy to answer. – La această întrebare se poate răspunde ușor.

► cu verbe „to blame” (a muștra) și „to let” (a închiria).

Exemplu: The house is to let. – Casa este de închiriat.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. *Decide whether to use the infinitive with or without „to”.*

Decideți dacă folosiți infinitivul cu sau fără „to”.

1. The window was too dirty (to see) through.
2. He came (to help) the old lady.
3. Have you done this (to annoy) your parents?
4. He made her (to answer) the letter at once.
5. I've forgotten how (to spell) that word.
6. Mr Strict wouldn't (to let) his son (to drive).
7. You ought (to phone) her immediately.
8. The boss told me when (to repair) the engine.
9. Can you tell me how (to get) to the cinema?
10. Neil Armstrong was the first man (to land) on the moon.
11. The roof must (to be repaired) at once.
12. I don't consider it (to be) true.
13. After his A-level he wanted (to study) languages.
14. The fans waited for the pop star (to arrive).
15. He opened the door (to let) the dog in.

II. *Decide whether to use the infinitive active or passive voice with or without „to”.*

Decideți dacă folosiți infinitiv activ sau pasiv cu sau fără „to”.

1. It's not difficult for the students (to answer) the teacher's questions.
2. This boy shouldn't (to leave) alone.
3. The high prices caused many tourists (to stay) home.
4. The father wanted his son (to become) a lawyer.
5. The Bakers have arranged for the carpenter (to come) next week.
6. Leave the door open for father (to hear) the bell.
7. It's interesting (to listen) to other people.
8. She forgot (to lock) the door, so the burglar could easily (to get) in the house.
9. The boys were not sure whether (to elect) Paul chairman.
10. The walls ought (to paint).
11. The problem is (to discuss).
12. He seems (to be able to spend) a lot of money.
13. The glasses were (not to find).
14. It's very difficult (to get) a good job.
15. Who is (to blame)?

III. *Shorten the sentences by using infinitive constructions.*

Scurtați propozițiile folosind construcții infinitivale.

1. When Tom had lost his purse he didn't know where he should go to.
2. Sheila is the only student who deserves the prize.
3. She couldn't find a piece of paper which she could leave the note on.
4. We urgently need somebody who can look after our children.
5. He gave them land which they could live on.
6. The English runner was the second who reached the finishing line.
7. Mr Smithers was the only person who was hurt in the accident.
8. The old lady really needs somebody who she can talk to.
9. I want a pullover which goes with my red skirt.
10. They didn't know whether they should accept the invitation.
11. Sir Francis Drake was the first Englishman who sailed around the world.
12. The doctor told me how I should take this medicine.
13. Sue is always the first person who arrives and the last person who leaves.
14. Little Billy is the youngest boy who acts in this play.
15. Years ago she didn't even know how she could translate the letters.

IV. Translate the following sentences. Use infinitive constructions.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții. Folosiți construcții infinitivale.

1. Administratorul ar dori ca toți elevii să părăsească școala la ora 13.
2. Dl Clumsy este al doilea care cade de pe cal astăzi.
3. Nu este ușor să înveți gramatica limbii engleze.
4. John este singurul care a frecventat cursul de croitorie.
5. Dl Kurz est mult prea în vârstă ca să participe la concursul de dans.
6. Lecțiile ar trebui făcute ordonat.
7. Noul șef ar dori ca eu să rămân vineri mai mult la birou.
8. Vecinul nostru a văzut că un bărbat a intrat ieri în grădină.
9. Ai putea veni, te rog, la sfârșitul săptămânii viitoare să mă ajuti la pregătirea pentru petrecere?
10. Este timpul ca el să-și caute un nou loc de muncă.
11. Pot să-ți arăt cum se depanează un pneu.
12. Poliția a căutat peste tot, dar pistolul nu a fost găsit.
13. Înainte de a ne putea muta, mai este multă treabă de făcut.
14. John trebuie să se pregătească să ia masa de seară acum.
15. Nu este timp de pierdut.

Gerund

Gerunziu

Gerunziul este un verb substantivat, adică un fost verb care a devenit substantiv.

Exemplu: reading

(Pentru construirea formei -ing și probleme de ortografie, v. p. 20)

Formele gerunziului la diferite timpuri.

Forme	Timp	Activ	Pasiv
	Present Tense	writing	being written
	Present Perfect	having written	having been written

Forma de activ prezent este mai frecventă. Forma de perfect exprimă anterioritatea.

Gerunziul se folosește:

► ca subiect

Exemplu: Writing books is hard work. – Scrisul cărților este un lucru greu.

► după prepoziții

after	– după
in spite of	– în ciuda
before	– înainte
instead of	– în loc
without	– fără
by	– prin
because of	– din cauza etc.

Exemplu: Instead of going to bed early, he went out. – În loc să meargă devreme la culcare, el a ieșit în oraș.

► după expresii cu prepoziții

a) Verb + prepoziție

to adjust to	– a se adapta la
to agree with	– a fi de acord cu
to apologize for	– a se scuza pentru
to ask about	– a întreba de
to ask for	– a ruga pentru
to be afraid of	– a-i fi teamă de
to begin by	– a începe cu
to be looking forward to	– a aștepta cu nerăbdare să ...
to be for/against	– a fi pentru/contra
to care for	– a păsa de ...
to complain about	– a se plânge de
to concentrate on	– a se concentra asupra
to consist of	– a consta din
to cope with	– a fi de partea ...
to decide for/ against	– a se hotărî pentru/contra
to depend on	– a depinde de
to die of	– a muri de
to dream about/of	– a visa la
to escape from	– a fugi de
to give up	– a renunța la ...
to go on	– a continua să ...
to insist on	– a insista asupra
to keep on	– a continua cu
to pay for	– a plăti pentru
to prevent (somebody) from	– a împiedica pe cineva să ...
to put off	– a amâna

to spend (money/time) on	- a cheltui bani/timp pe
to succeed in	- a reuși să ...
to take part in	- a participa la
to talk about/of	- a vorbi despre etc.

Exemplu: I apologize for coming late. – Mă scuz pentru întârziere.

b) Adjectiv + prepoziție

angry about/at	- necăjit pe/supărat pe/furios pe ...
clever at	- bun la
crazy about	- nebun după
disappointed about	- dezamăgit de
excited about	- emoționat de
famous for	- vestit pentru
fond of	- entuziasmat de
glad about	- bucuros de
good at	- bun la
impressed by	- impresionat de
interested in	- interesat de
keen on	- entuziasmat de
proud of	- mândru de
tired of	- a fi sătul de
used to	- obișnuit cu
worried about	- îngrijorat de

Exemplu: She is afraid of flying. – Ea se teme să zboare.

c) Substantiv + prepoziție:

advantage of	- avantaj (din)/în avantajul ...
alternative of	- alternativă la
chance of	- șansa de a ...
choice between	- alegere între
difficulty in	- dificultate la
doubt about	- îndoieli asupra
experience in	- experiență în ...
opportunity of	- ocazia de
place for	- loc pentru/de
possibility of	- posibilitatea de
reason for	- motiv de
trouble in	- necaz cu
way of	- mod de

Exemplu: She has a lot of experience in typing. – Ea are multă experiență la dactilografiat.

▶ după anumite expresii ca:

to be busy	- a fi ocupat
to be like	- a fi ca .../a semăna cu ...
to be near	- a fi aproape să
to be no good	- a nu fi bun
to be no use	- a nu avea sens/rost
to be worth	- a valora
can't help	- a nu putea altfel decât
can't stand	- a nu putea suporta
to be no good at	- a nu fi bun la/în

Exemplu: He is busy writing. – El este ocupat cu scrisul.

▶ complement după anumite verbe:

to admit	- a admite
to appreciate	- a aprecia
to avoid	- a evita
to consider	- a lua în considerație/a considera
to delay	- a amâna
to deny	- a nega
to dislike	- a nu-i plăcea
to enjoy	- a-i plăcea/a se bucura de ...
to escape	- a evada
to finish	- a termina
to imagine	- a-și închipui
to mention	- a menționa
to mind	- a avea ceva împotriva
to miss	- a pierde
to practise	- a exersa
to reject	- a respinge
to resist	- a rezista
to risk	- a risca
to suggest	- a propune
to stop	- a înceta
to understand	- a înțelege

Exemplu: I enjoyed sailing. – Mi-a făcut plăcere să navighez.

Infinitive or Gerund

Infinitiv sau gerunziu

Anumite verbe pot atrage după ele un infinitiv sau un gerunziu. În anumite cazuri acest lucru nu are nici o urmărire asupra sensului, în alte cazuri apare o diferență de sens.

Folosire

► Următoarele verbe se pot afla, *alternativ, la infinitiv sau la gerunziu, fără să-și modifice sensul:*

to begin	– a începe
to continue	– a continua
to intend	– a intenționa
to start	– a începe

Exemplu: The little girl started to cry.

The little girl started crying.

► Verbe care indică plăcerea sau neplăcerea ca „to like”, „to love”, „to prefer”, „to hate” apar la *gerunziu*, dacă trebuie exprimată o *plăcere sau o neplăcere în general*.

Exemplu: Children like eating chocolate. – Copiii le place să mănânce ciocolată.

► Dacă există *cazuri unice concrete sau afirmații restrânse* (în special cu „would”), atunci aceste verbe apar la *infinitiv*.

Exemplu: The children usually don't like eating vegetables, but today they would love to eat some. – De obicei, copiii nu le plac legumele, dar azi s-ar bucura să le deguste.

► La următoarele verbe *se modifică sensul*, dacă urmează un gerunziu sau un infinitiv astfel:

a) to remember + Gerund	– a-și aminti să fi făcut ceva
to remember + Infinitive	– a te gândi să faci ceva
b) to regret + Gerund	– a regreta să fi făcut ceva
to regret + Infinitive	– a regreta că trebuie să faci ceva
c) to forget + Gerund	– a uita să fi făcut ceva
to forget + Infinitive	– a uita să faci ceva
d) to stop + Gerund	– a înceta să faci ceva
to stop + Infinitive	– a înceta pentru a face altceva
e) to try + Gerund	– a încerca ceva
to try + Infinitive	– a te strădui să faci ceva
f) to go on + Gerund	– a face ceva în continuare
to go on + Infinitive	– a face ceva (nou) în continuare

Exemplu: I remember meeting Jill for the first time. – Îmi amintesc cum am întâlnit-o pe Jill prima oară.

I must remember to post the letters. – Trebuie să-mi amintesc să pun scrisorile la poștă.

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Form sentences using the expressions in brackets plus gerund.

Formați propoziții folosind expresiile din paranteză plus gerunziu:

1. Harry promised he wouldn't smoke anymore. (to give up)
2. The guide said we could also visit the gallery. (opportunity of)
3. He is very proud. He has passed his exam. (proud of)
4. He is not very happy. He doesn't earn enough money. (to complain about)
5. The teacher said to the students, „If you don't learn your new words, you won't get a good mark.” (choice between)
6. Sam has a dream. He wants to be a pop star. (to dream of)
7. Don't rely on Simon. (to be no use)
8. My mother is very busy. She's preparing dinner. (to be busy)
9. Peter is very tired in the evening because of the long work. (not to be used to)
10. I will be pleased to meet your sister next week. (to be looking forward to)
11. The workers painted the walls next week. I'll have to pay them. (to pay for)
12. You shouldn't read that book. (not to be worth)
13. It wasn't easy for us to find the way. (difficulties in)
14. I play tennis every weekend. (to be fond of)
15. My brother is not at home. You needn't phone him. (to be no use)
16. If I go to the concert, I'll meet her. (not to be able to avoid)
17. I didn't see the film, because I didn't know that it was on. (to miss)
18. He finally got his driving licence. (to succeed in)
19. We had dinner. Then we went for a walk. (after)
20. He is a very good dancer. (good at)

II. Translate the following sentences. Use gerunds.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții. Folosiți gerunziul:

1. Întotdeauna (lui) i-a fost teamă să zboare.
2. Risc să-mi pierd slujba, dacă te ajut.
3. Copiii nu sunt obișnuiți să stea treji atât de mult.
4. El a fost foarte dezamăgit, că n-ai venit la petrecerea aniversării sale.
5. Ei au ajuns în Anglia, pentru că sperau să poată duce o viață mai bună acolo.
6. El nu voia să accepte că făcuse o greșală.
7. Care este motivul pentru care vii din nou târziu?
8. Nu pot să suport așteptarea îndelungată.
9. Clientul insistă să vorbească cu managerul.
10. Preotul a continuat să-și țină predica.
11. Nu are sens să-l vizităm la spital.

12. Vă deranjează dacă deschid fereastra ?
13. În loc să-și termine treaba, el a plecat în concediu.
14. Nu am avut absolut nici o ocazie să pun întrebări.
15. Puteți să împiedicați ca plantele să moară, dacă le udați regulat.
16. Ar trebui să iei în considerare colaborarea cu Sally.
17. El n-a fost de acord să mai cheltuiască pentru concediu.
18. În loc să-mi spună în fine adevărul, el inventa în continuare minciuni.
19. Călătoriile i-au făcut întotdeauna o deosebită plăcere.
20. Judith era foarte supărată că nu te-a întâlnit.

Final Test: Infinitive and Gerund

Test

Test final: Infinitiv și Gerunziu

I. Decide whether to use infinitive or gerund.

Decideți dacă folosiți infinitivul sau gerunziul.

1. Would you like (to have) dinner with me one evening next week?
2. I would rather (to go) by train than (to walk).
3. The teacher had no pen (to write) with.
4. He entered the room without (to see) me.
5. The dog was too fast (to be run) over.
6. This book is easy (to understand).
7. She couldn't help (to laugh).
8. My father is busy (to cut) the grass.
9. The teacher allowed the students (to go) half an hour earlier.
10. It's time for them (to go).
11. I wouldn't like (to swim) in that dirty water.
12. Lock the door before (to leave) the house.
13. It's possible (to get) the missing parts.
14. The student was very proud of (to win) the prize.
15. The radio needs (to repair).
16. I regret (to say) that he has made a mistake.
17. It's no use (to try) (to make) him change his mind.
18. We were asked (to finish) our test without (to look up) words.
19. I forgot (to tell) you that I don't like (to play) cards.
20. After (to practise) a lot the band started (to play).
21. The caretaker made the boys (to leave) the building.
22. I don't want him (to come) so often.
23. (to look at) these photos is almost like (to be) there.
24. The criminal was arrested for (to rob) the shop.

Conditional Clauses – If – Clauses

Propoziții condiționale – Propoziții cu „If”

O propoziție condițională – Conditional Clause, este o **propoziție secundară**, care începe cu „if” (dacă), „in case” (în caz că) sau „unless” (dacă nu). Această propoziție secundară formează împreună cu o propoziție principală o frază.

Exemplu: **If it rains,** **I will not go out.**
 propoziție secundară propoziție principală
 (subordinate clause) (main clause)

În limba engleză există trei tipuri de propoziții-If. Fiecare tip are o anumită regulă pentru ordinea timpurilor. Alegerea tipului se orientează după felul condiției, care trebuie exprimată prin propoziția-If.

Type I: Probable Condition

Tipul I: condiție probabilă

Regula	Dacă în propoziția-If se folosește prezentul (Present Tense), atunci, în propoziția principală, se va folosi viitor I (Future I).	
Exemplu	If it rains, Dacă plouă,	I will stay at home. rămân acasă.
Timp (tense)	prezent (Present Tense)	viitor I (Future I)
Mod de formare	forma I a verbului la he, she, it + „-(e)s”	will + forma I a verbului
Felul condiției	Condiția (dacă plouă) se poate îndeplini. Este probabil să plouă.	

Regula de bază

Această regulă scurtă pentru folosirea timpurilor în propoziția-If de tip I trebuie precizată, pentru a acoperi toate cazurile imaginabile.

Extinderea regulii scurte

În propoziții „Conditional Clauses” de tip I sunt posibile următoarele timpuri:

Propoziție-If	Propoziție principală
Present Tense Simple (prezent simplu)	→ Future I (viitor I)
Present Tense Continuous (prezent aspectul continuu)	→ Imperative (imperativ)
Present Perfect (perfect)	→ Modal Auxiliary (verb auxiliar modal/incomplet)
should + infinitive	→ Present Tense Simple (prezent simplu)

Propoziție-If

Cazul 1

Present Tense Simple

Propoziție principală

Future I *sau*
Imperative *sau*
Modal Auxiliary

Exemplu: If it rains, I will stay at home.
If it rains, stay at home!
If it rains, we can stay at home.

Present Tense Simple în propoziția-If arată că acea condiție se referă la un eveniment viitor.

Propoziție-If

Cazul 2

Present Tense Continuous

Propoziție principală

Future I *sau*
Imperative *sau*
Modal Auxiliary

Exemplu: If he is working now, he'll phone me later.
If he is working now, tell him to phone me later!
If he is working now, he can phone me later.

Present Tense Continuous în propoziția-If exprimă faptul că acea condiție este încă în curs de desfășurare.

Propoziție-If
Present Perfect**Propoziție principală**

Future I *sau*
Imperative *sau*
Modal Auxiliary

Cazul 3

Exemplu: If he has already finished his work, he'll come soon.
If he has already finished his work, ask him to come soon!
If he has already finished his work, he can come soon.

Present Perfect în propoziția-If arată că această condiție se referă la lucruri deja întâmplate.

Propoziție-If

should + Infinitive

Propoziție principală

Future I *sau*
Imperative *sau*
Modal Auxiliary

Cazul 4

Exemplu: If Bob should lose his job, he'll move.
If Bob should lose his job, don't worry!
If Bob should lose his job, he must move.

Should + infinitive în propoziția-If arată că se consideră puțin probabil ca această condiție să fie realizată.

Propoziție-If

Present Tense Simple

Propoziție principală

Present Tense Simple

Cazul 5

Exemplu: If the battery is flat, the engine doesn't start.

Această combinație este folosită când enunțul este general valabil. „If” are aici sensul „whenever” (ori de câte ori).

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put the verb in brackets in the correct tense.

Puneți verbul din paranteză la timpul potrivit.

- If I get a dog for Christmas, I (to go) for a walk every day.
- If Susan finds your book, she (to give) it back to you.
- If you leave the window open, the cat (to jump) out.
- If Tom hurries, he (to catch) the bus.
- If she (to send) me an invitation, I (to go) to her party.
- I will come around if I (to have) time.
- If I find your ring, I (to telephone) you at once.
- If the sun (to shine), he (to have) a barbecue.
- If my uncle comes, he (to take) us to the cinema.
- If my father (to find) a better job, we (to move).
- We (to buy) a bigger house if we (to have) the money.
- If the bus drivers go on strike, no buses (to run).
- If the city hasn't got the money to pay the dustmen, there (to be) dirt everywhere.
- If you (to send) the voucher, you (to get) a free record.
- If you (to write) her a postcard, she (to be) pleased.
- I (to call for) a doctor if she (not/to feel) better tomorrow.
- If you (to go on) with your diet, you (to lose) weight soon.
- If everybody (to come), there (to be) ten of us.
- If we can afford it, we (to fly) to London.
- If your brother (to lend) us his car, we (to be able to) go shopping.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

- Dacă azi am liber, ies în oraș.
- În caz că ea ar veni, te înștiințez.
- Dacă vă întâlniți cu dna Bax, spuneți-i, vă rog, să mă sune la telefon.
- Dacă Conny tocmai își repară bicicleta, va fi gata pe la ora 5.
- Dacă pachetul nu sosește curând, voi telefona la firmă.
- Dacă se udă florile în timpul zilei, cresc mai bine.
- Dacă Sam n-a făcut încă rezervare la excursie, ar trebui să se grăbească.
- Dacă găsesc harta orașului, pot să-ți arăt strada.
- Dacă Carlo s-a hotărât să rămână la Londra, el ar trebui să-și caute o locuință.
- Dacă Rick vine în Germania, îți va telefona direct.

Type II: Improbable Condition

Tipul II: condiție improbabilă

Regula	Dacă în propoziția-If există imperfect (Past Tense), atunci în propoziția principală stă condițional I (Conditional I).	
Exemplu	If it rained, Dacă ar ploua,	I would stay at home. eu aș sta acasă.
Timp (tense)	Past Tense	Conditional I
Mod de formare	forma 1 a verbului + „-ed” sau a 2-a formă a verbului	would + forma 1 a verbului
Felul condiției	▶ Condiția (dacă ar ploua) este considerată improbabilă. ▶ Condiția nu se poate realiza. Exemplu: If I were you, I would go. – Dacă aș fi în locul tău (ceea ce de altfel nu este posibil), m-aș duce.	

Regula de bază

Extinderea regulii scurte

În „Conditional Clauses” de tipul II sunt posibile următoarele timpuri:

Propoziție-If	Propoziție principală
Past Tense	▶ condițional I ▶ should/could/might/ought to + infinitive ▶ condițional II ▶ should/could/might/ought to + have + a 3-a formă a verbului (sau forma 1 a verbului + „-ed”)

Extindere

Propoziție-If
Past Tense

Propoziție principală

Condițional I sau
should/could/might/ought to + infinitive

Cazul 1

Exemplu: If I had a lot of money, I would buy a house.
 If I had a lot of money, I should buy a house.
 If I had a lot of money, I could buy a house.
 If I had a lot of money, I might buy a house.
 If I had a lot of money, I ought to buy a house.

Frazele cu această combinație exprimă faptul că această condiție – văzută în raport cu prezentul sau cu viitorul – reprezintă o pură ipoteză. Diferitele verbe auxiliare din propoziția principală pe care le putem folosi aduc variante de sens privind concluziile (ar..., ar trebui, ar putea,...)

Propoziție-If

Past Tense

Propoziție principală

Condițional II sau

should/could/ might/ought to + have +

a 3-a formă a verbului

(sau + forma I a verbului + „-ed”)

Exemplu: If I had a lot of money, I would have bought a house.

If I had a lot of money, I should have bought a house.

If I had a lot of money, I could have bought a house.

If I had a lot of money, I might have bought a house.

If I had a lot of money, I ought to have bought a house.

Frazele cu această combinație exprimă faptul, că raportat la prezent, această condiție este văzută ca o excepție, care însă ar fi avut efect deja în trecut. Diversele verbe auxiliare aduc variante de sens pentru concluzii (ar...fi, ar fi trebuit să..., ar fi putut să...etc.)

„Was” sau „were” în propoziția -If

În loc de „was” la persoanele I și a 3-a singular (I, he, she, it) se folosește în propozițiile -If adesea „were”, dacă trebuie exprimat ceva ireal.

Exemplu: If I were you, ...

If I were a pop star, ...

If I were at home, ...

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Put the verbs in brackets in the correct tense.

Puneți verbele din paranteză la timpul potrivit.

1. If I had a car, I (to lend) it to you.

2. If a burglar tried to rob me, I (to call) the police.

3. If I (to be) you, I would write the letter immediately.

4. If Sam (to live) in London, he would go to the theatre every month.

5. If I had a house in that area, I (to be) very glad.

6. If Sally (to wear) a mini-skirt, everybody (to laugh).

7. If you (to leave) the bike outside, it (to be stolen).

8. She (to phone) you if she (to know) your number.

9. If there (to be) a bridge across the Channel, travelling to England (to become) much easier.

10. If I (to believe) in UFOs, I (to become) a member of the UFO club.

11. If I (to know) him better, I (can/to tell) you more about him.

12. If Mrs Calm (to be) not so slow, she (to get) the job.

13. What (to say) your father if you (not to pass) the exam?

14. If I (to have) your hair, I (not to have) it cut.

15. He (to be) very angry if he (to see) you now.

16. If the Meyers (to have) a garden, the children (can/to play) outside.

17. Sue (can/to apply) for the job if she (to pass) the exam.

18. If our neighbours (to have) a baby-sitter, they (can/to go out) more often.

19. If I (to win) the pools, I (to buy) a villa in Italy.

20. If you (to read) the newspaper regularly, you (to be) better informed.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Dacă aș fi avut destui bani, mi-aș fi cumpărat deja casetofonul.

2. El ar mai ajunge trenul, dacă ar alerga.

3. Dacă vremea ar fi mai bună, am putea merge să înotăm.

4. Dacă ar fi Carmen puțin mai politicoasă, n-ar avea atâtea supărări.

5. Dacă ar fi mai puțini elevi într-o clasă, elevii ar putea învăța mai mult.

6. Dacă ai primi 1000 \$, chiar ar trebui să-ți deschizi un carnet de economii.

7. Eu n-aș mai avea nici un minut liber, dacă aș merge așa des ca tine pe terenul de tenis.

8. Dacă partidul meu ar fi în guvern, ar fi totul mai bine.

9. Dacă aș fi sănătos, aș putea să merg cu voi în drumeție.

10. Dacă ar trebui să cumpărăm o mașină nouă, am căuta una mai rapidă.

Type III: Impossible Condition

Tipul III: condiție imposibilă

regula
bază

Regula	Dacă în propoziția-If există mai mult ca perfect (Past Perfect), atunci în propoziția principală se folosește condițional II (Conditional II).	
Exemplu	If it had rained, Dacă ar fi plouat,	I would have stayed at home, aș fi rămas acasă.
Timp (tense)	mai mult ca perfect (Past Perfect)	condițional II (Conditional II)
Mod de formare	had + forma I a verbului + „-ed” (sau had + a 3-a formă a verbului)	would + forma I a verbului + „-ed” (sau would have + 3-a formă a verbului)
Felul condiției	Condiția (dacă ar fi plouat) nu se poate îndeplini. Nu a plouat.	

Extinderea regulii scurte

În „Conditional Clauses” de tipul III sunt folosite următoarele timpuri:

Extin-
dere

Propoziție-If	Propoziție principală
Past Perfect (mai mult ca perfect)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> ▶ condițional II ▶ should/could/might/ought to + have + a 3-a formă a verbului (sau forma I a verbului + „-ed”) ▶ condițional II ▶ should/could/might/ought to + infinitiv

Propoziție-If
Past Perfect

Propoziție principală
Condițional II sau
should/could/might/ought to + have +
a 3-a formă a verbului (sau forma I
a verbului + „-ed”)

Exemplu: If I had ..., I would have ...
If I had ..., I should have ...
If I had ..., I could have ...
If I had ..., I might have ...
If I had ..., I ought have ...

Propozițiile de acest fel exprimă faptul că nu pot fi îndeplinite condițiile, deoarece se referă la trecut. Diferitele verbe auxiliare care pot fi folosite aduc variante de sens în privința concluziilor (ar fi trebuit/putut să aibă/fie). Concluziile se referă la trecut.

Propoziție-If
Past Perfect

Propoziție principală

Condițional I sau

should/could/might/ought to + infinitiv

Cazul 2

Exemplu: If she hadn't ..., she wouldn't ...
If she hadn't ..., she couldn't ...
If she hadn't ..., she shouldn't ...
If she hadn't ..., she mightn't ...
If she hadn't ..., she ought not to ...

Pentru propoziții de acest fel este valabil același lucru ca și la cazul I cu particularitatea că toate consecințele se răsfrâng asupra prezentului.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Put the verbs in brackets in the correct tense.
Puneți verbele din paranteză la timpul potrivit.

1. If you had tried, you (to be) successful.
2. If we had gone to the party, we (to meet) him.
3. If she had hurried, she (to catch) the train.
4. If I (to know) this before, I would have helped you.
5. If your brother (to leave) in time, he wouldn't have been late for the meeting.
6. If the rescue team (to find) him earlier, they (can/to save) his life.
7. If the driver(not/to wear) a seat belt, he (to be) seriously injured.
8. If I (to know) that Sheila was coming, I (to pick) her up at the station.
9. If we (to be) back before midnight, the warden (not/to lock) us out.
10. If you (to do) as you were told, this (not/to happen).
11. If you (to phone) earlier, we (to be able to/to reserve) you a room.
12. If we (to go) to France, we (to stay) with my sister.
13. If the students (to go) to bed earlier, they (not/to be) so tired yesterday.
14. I (to leave) school last year if my father (not/to tell) me to finish the 10th form.

15. If his parents (to spend) more time on his education, he (not/to become) such a person.
16. If Sam (not/to drink) so much alcohol, he (not/to lose) his driving licence.
17. If you (to ask) Mr Carter, he (to get) you a cheaper ticket.
18. If the wages (to be raised), the workers (not/to go) on strike last month.
19. If Sally (to apply), she (to get) the job.
20. If I (to have) enough money with me, I (to buy) the dress.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. V-am fi ajutat cu plăcere la mutat, dacă n-am fi fost în concediu.
2. Dacă n-ar fi avut-o Carl pe sora lui alături, ar fi fost o seară plicticoasă.
3. Dacă n-ai fi mers atât de repede, ai fi văzut semaforul.
4. Nici eu n-aș fi crezut, dacă n-aș fi văzut poza.
5. Mama mea ar fi mers cu plăcere la teatru, dacă n-ar fi fost atât de bolnavă.
6. Ți-aș fi împrumutat cartea, dacă n-aș fi avut eu personal nevoie de ea.
7. Dacă Sheila n-ar fi fost atât de răsfățată de părinții ei, n-ar fi atât de egoistă.
8. Eu aș fi putut să repar singur mașina, dacă aș fi avut uneltele potrivite.
9. Dacă Leo n-ar fi fost mereu atât de leneș, ar fi luat examenul.
10. Ar fi fost mai bine, dacă ai fi întrebat medicul.

Final Test: Conditional Clauses

Test final: propoziții condiționale

I. Put the verbs in brackets in the correct tense.

Puneți verbele din paranteză la timpul potrivit.

1. If the weather is fine, we (to go) out.
2. If he had watched the football match on TV, he (to know) the result now.
3. He (to be) here now if the train hadn't been late.
4. We (to go) to Spain in our next holidays if we can afford it.
5. If we went to Spain, we (to stay) at a first-class hotel.
6. If Peter passes his exam next week, he (to go) to university.
7. If you (to like), I'll get the ticket for you.
8. If he wants to see the new film, he (to have to/to go) to the cinema.
9. If he had read the instructions, he (not/to break) the machine.

10. If he takes another English course, he (to be) perfect by next year.
11. If I (to be) you, I (not/to visit) him this week.
12. If he hadn't been ill, he (can/to take part) in the game.
13. If he had been willing to spend another £ 5, he (to be able to/to get) a better pullover.
14. If you (not/to go) home so early, you wouldn't have missed the best part.
15. If there is no petrol in the tank, the car (not/to run).
16. If I (to be) a teacher, I wouldn't be so strict.
17. If he (to obey) the order, this wouldn't have happened.
18. If he (not/to rob) the bank, he wouldn't be in prison now.
19. If he (to marry) that horrible woman next month, he (to be) a prisoner for the rest of his life.
20. He would never be what he is now, if he (not/to work) very hard all his life.

II. Translate the sentences. Mind the type of if-clause.

Traduceți propozițiile. Atenție la tipul propoziției-If!

1. Dacă nu ar fi așa un cap-sec, n-ar fi făcut asta niciodată.
2. Când vorbesc, nu-mi place să fiu întrerupt.
3. El n-ar fi fost concediat, dacă și-ar fi recunoscut imediat greșeala.
4. Dacă Sally nu se simte bine în acest moment, ar trebui să meargă la doctor.
5. Dacă Pat vinde mașina, va trebui să meargă din nou cu autobuzul.
6. Dacă Ron sosește la timp, putem să mai mergem la Zoo.
7. Dacă am fi găsit actele mai devreme, ne-ar fi economisit o grămadă de muncă.
8. Amândouă fetele s-ar fi înecat, dacă n-ar fi fost o barcă prin apropiere.

The Noun

Substantivul

Un substantiv are, de obicei, o **formă de singular** și o **formă de plural**.

Exemplu: Singular: book – carte
Plural: books – cărți

Cazurile substantivului:

1. Nominativ (subject case)
2. Genitiv (genitive)
3. Dativ (object case)
4. Acuzativ (object case)

Un substantiv se declină, dacă îl punem la diferite cazuri.

Cazul	Singular	Plural
1.	the girl (fata)	the girls (fetele)
2.	the girl's (al/a fetei)	the girls' (al fetelor)
3.	the girl (fetei)	the girls (fetelor)
4.	the girl (pe fată)	the girls (pe fete)

Așa după cum arată exemplul, în limba engleză există numai 3 cazuri, dativul și acuzativul coincid cu **Object Case**. Diferitele cazuri nu sunt marcate prin schimbarea articolului. În limba engleză există terminații numai pentru genitiv și plural. În rest trebuie aflat din topică dacă un substantiv este subiect sau complement.

În domeniul substantivelor există de fapt numai două domenii care pot crea dificultăți.

- Pluralul
- Genitivul

The Plural

Pluralul

Pluralul se formează după cum urmează:

- În mod normal se adaugă un -s la forma de singular.

Exemplu: book – books

- După o consoană sibilantă (s, ș, ...) se adaugă „-es”.

Exemplu: dress – dresses
rochie – rochii

- După consoană +y pluralul se formează cu „-ies”.

Exemplu: city – cities
oraș – orașe

- Unele substantive terminate în „-o” formează pluralul „-oes”.

Exemplu: hero – heroes
erou – eroi

Din această grupă fac parte: potato, tomato, negro, echo.

Notă: La cuvintele de origine străină această regulă nu este valabilă.

Exemplu: kilos, pianos, studios, tobaccos, radios, photos etc.

- Substantive terminate în „-fe” sau „-f” formează pluralul adesea în „-ves”.

Exemplu: life – lives
viață – vieți.

Din această grupă mai fac parte: knife, wife, leaf, loaf, thief, calf, half, shelf, wolf.

Excepții: beliefs, briefs, chiefs, handkerchiefs, proofs, reefs, roofs.

- Cuvintele de origine străină își păstrează forma de plural inițială.

De exemplu:

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
analysis	– analyses	minimum	– minima
bacillus	– bacilli	phenomenon	– phenomena
bacterium	– bacteria	stimulus	– stimuli
basis	– bases	thesis	– theses
crisis	– crises		

Regula
de bază

Excepții

- Unele substantive au forme neregulate la plural.

De exemplu:

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
child	– children	mouse	– mice
foot	– feet	ox	– oxen
goose	– geese	tooth	– teeth
louse	– lice	woman	– women
man	– men		

- La unele substantive forma de plural este la fel cu forma de singular.

Exemplu: fish – fish

pește – pești

Din această grupă fac parte: a) sheep, salmon, trout, deer, grouse

b) nume de naționalități care se termină în „-ese”

Exemplu: Japanese

c) aparate tehnice care se termină în „-craft”

Exemplu: aircraft

d) French, Swiss

The Plural of Compound Nouns

Pluralul substantivelor compuse

La substantivele compuse este valabilă regula:

Dacă există un substantiv a cărui sferă a noțiunii este mai largă, atunci pluralul apare la acest substantiv.

Exemplu: daughters-in-law – nurori

„s”-ul apare la „daughter”, deoarece substantivul compus are sensul principal „fiică-daughter”, nu „lege-law”.

- Dacă nu există un substantiv cu o sferă mai largă a noțiunii, atunci forma de plural „s” apare la sfârșit.

Exemplu: grown-ups – adulți

- La combinațiile cu „man/woman” + substantiv primesc ambele elemente componente plural, dacă se referă la apartenența la un sex.

Exemplu: women clerks – funcționare

Exercises

Exerciții

- I. Put the nouns into the plural.

Puneți substantivele la plural.

- | | |
|---------------|-------------|
| 1. shop | 26. ticket |
| 2. child | 27. house |
| 3. hovercraft | 28. ferry |
| 4. bookshelf | 29. window |
| 5. family | 30. nose |
| 6. day | 31. toy |
| 7. wife | 32. body |
| 8. photo | 33. chief |
| 9. tomato | 34. apple |
| 10. car | 35. street |
| 11. bus | 36. manager |
| 12. friend | 37. teacher |
| 13. company | 38. basis |
| 14. boat | 39. letter |
| 15. bush | 40. parrot |
| 16. boy | 41. donkey |
| 17. gentleman | 42. brother |
| 18. American | 43. key |
| 19. Japanese | 44. purse |
| 20. foot | 45. radio |
| 21. cigarette | 46. picture |
| 22. glass | 47. tree |
| 23. pen | 48. box |
| 24. clock | 49. flower |
| 25. piece | 50. bag |

- II. Put the compound nouns into the plural.

Puneți substantivele compuse la plural.

- | | |
|--------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. chairman | 5. son-in-law |
| 2. handbag | 6. air traffic controller |
| 3. record-shop | 7. teach-in |
| 4. bathing-costume | 8. mouse-trap |

- | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|
| 9. manservant | 20. broadcasting-station |
| 10. woman-hater | 21. bus-driver |
| 11. horseman | 22. ticket-collector |
| 12. passer-by | 23. have-not |
| 13. sit-in | 24. snowman |
| 14. schoolboy | 25. fellow |
| 15. armchair | 26. schoolmaster |
| 16. bookcase | 27. onlooker |
| 17. man student | 28. bedroom |
| 18. forget-me-not | 29. good-for-nothing |
| 19. roundabout | 30. dining-table |

Plural or Singular

Plural sau singular

Există substantive care au numai formă de singular sau numai formă de plural și al căror sens nu corespunde neapărat cu forma. Deosebim următoarele grupe:

- ▶ Substantive, care au *formă de singular* și împreună cu care verbul stă la *singular*.
Dintre acestea fac parte:
 - a) Denumiri de materiale, ca de ex.:
butter, coal, wood, water, iron, salt, oil etc.
Exemplu: Butter is on special offer. – Untul este la preț special.
 - b) Unele substantive colective (multe dintre ele terminate în „-ry”), ca de ex.:
jewellery, machinery, crockery, garbage, luggage, hair, furniture etc.
Exemplu: My luggage is still in the car. – Bagajul meu este încă în mașină.
 - c) Multe substantive abstracte, ca de ex.:
advice, information, knowledge, damage, progress, strength, confusion, work, evidence, homework etc.
Exemplu: His advice was very good. – Sfatul său a fost foarte bun.
Notă: Unele cuvinte din grupa a) pot obține sensul de singular prin „a piece of...”.

Exemplu: a piece of information – o informație
a piece of furniture – o piesă de mobilă

- ▶ Substantive care au formă de singular dar sens de plural și cu care verbul corespunzător stă la plural.

Dintre ele fac parte substantive colective (collective nouns), atunci când se face referire la activitatea sau starea membrilor grupului luați în parte, ca de ex.: police, family, staff, crew, band, choir, orchestra, government, company, firm, class, club, audience, cattle, group, party, jury, people etc.

Exemplu: The band are taking their instruments. – Formația tocmai își ia instrumentele.

Notă: Dacă se face referire la totalitatea grupului, verbul stă la singular.

Exemplu: The band is playing my favourite song. – Formația tocmai cântă cântecul meu preferat.

- ▶ Substantive care au formă de plural, dar au sens de singular, cu care verbul corespunzător stă totuși la plural.

Dintre ele fac parte:

- a) cuvinte cu sens de pereche, adică denumiri de obiecte, care constau din două părți identice, ca de ex.
scales, trousers, shorts, binoculars, glasses, scissors, jeans, tights, earphones, pyjamas etc.

Exemplu: Your trousers are on the bed. – Pantalonii tăi sunt pe pat.

Notă: Dacă subliniem faptul că este vorba de un singur obiect, atunci se adaugă „a pair of...”

Exemplu: a pair of glasses – o pereche de ochelari

- b) următoarele cuvinte: stairs, goods, clothes, belongings, wages, outskirts.

- ▶ Substantive care au *formă de plural*, dar *sens de singular* și cu care verbul corespunzător stă la *singular*.

Dintre ele fac parte:

- a) nume de discipline terminate în „-cs”, ca de ex.
mathematics, physics, politics, linguistics, economics etc.

Exemplu: Mathematics is my favourite subject. – Matematica este obiectul meu preferat.

b) unele boli, ca de ex.:

mumps, measles etc.

Exemplu: Measles is a children's disease. – Pojarul este o boală de copii.

c) „news” și „the United States”

Exemplu: The news comes next. – Urmează știrile.

d) unele jocuri, ca de ex. billards, dominoes, darts etc.

Exemplu: Billards is played in pubs. – Biliardul se joacă în localuri publice.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Put the verbs in brackets into the correct Present Tense form.

Puneți verbele din paranteză la forma corectă de prezent.

1. The scissors (to be) in the drawer.
2. These goods (to be) very expensive.
3. This (to be) the news.
4. The United States (to support) many other countries.
5. Darts (to be played) by people of all ages.
6. Electronics (to be) a very interesting subject.
7. His wages (to be) very high.
8. The police (to be) trying to catch the man.
9. The stairs (to lead) to the cellar.
10. Some people (to be) very angry with you.
11. His knowledge of English (not/to be) very good.
12. I think your glasses (to lie) on the table.
13. This information (to be given) to me by the office.
14. My family (to have to) stay at home.
15. The government (to have) a major interest in solving the problem.
16. The outskirts of the city (not/to be) very nice.
17. His hair (to turn) grey.
18. Coal (to be found) in some parts of England.
19. Class 8b (just/to have) a party.
20. The party (to consist) of 25 students.
21. The scales (to be) in the kitchen.

22. Your trousers (to be) very dirty.
23. The cattle (to be) in the meadow.
24. My friend's family (to be) very nice persons.
25. The clergy (to be) at the meeting.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Personalul are concediu.
2. Publicul este rugat să facă liniște.
3. Clasa tocmai scrie un test.
4. Temele sunt destul de dificile.
5. Aceste informații nu erau scrise în ziar.
6. S-au făcut progrese mari.
7. Pantalonii tăi Jeans s-au rupt.
8. Lumea era foarte agitată.
9. Oreionul este o boală neplăcută.
10. Binoclul aparține bunicului meu.
11. Jurații se retrag spre deliberare.
12. Corul tocmai cântă cântecul meu preferat.
13. Pantaloul scurt este deja în geamantan.
14. Grupa este compusă din 10 membri.
15. Firma are nevoie de noi spații pentru birouri.

The Genitive: s-Genitive and of-Genitive

Genitivul: genitivul cu „-s” și genitivul cu „of”

În limba engleză există două posibilități de a forma genitivul:

- genitivul cu „-s”
- genitivul cu „of”

The s-Genitive

Genitivul cu „-s”

Genitivul cu „-s” este folosit pentru a arăta că persoanelor sau animalelor aparține ceva, sau că există o apartenență.

Exemplu: father's car – automobilul tatei (automobilul care aparține tatei)

Formare

Formarea genitivului cu „-s”:

Singular: forma de singular a substantivului + 's

Plural: forma de plural a substantivului + ' (dacă pluralul se termină în -s)

Exemplu: Mary's book – cartea Mariei

the boys' book – cartea băieților

Notă: Genitivul singular înseamnă că posesorul este o singură persoană (un animal).

Genitivul plural înseamnă că mai multe persoane (mai multe animale) sunt posesoare.

Exemplu: Genitiv singular: Mary's book – cartea Mariei

Genitiv plural: the boys' book – cartea băieților

Numărul de obiecte posedate (ex. carte, cărți) nu are nici un efect asupra formării genitivului.

Exemplu: Tom's book (cartea lui Tom)

Tom's books (cărțile lui Tom)

Elemente specifice

Este demn de luat în considerare:

► Dacă substantivul *nu are plural în „-s”*, atunci genitivul plural se formează ca la singular.

Exemplu: the women's dresses – rochiile femeilor

► Dacă un substantiv are *deja la singular un „-s”*, atunci genitivul singular se formează ca la un substantiv la plural.

Exemplu: Mrs Evans' house – casa doamnei Evans.

Genitivul cu „-s” se folosește:

► la persoane și animale.

Exemplu: the boy's pullover – puloverul băiatului

The dog's bone – osul câinelui

► pentru a exprima *măsura timpului*

Exemplu: an hour's walk – o plimbare de o oră

2 years' experience – o experiență de 2 ani

Notă: Dacă indicația de timp conține un plural, se folosește genitivul plural.

► pentru desemnarea locurilor unde se află magazinele, locuințele etc. fără un cuvânt de referință

Exemplu: at the butcher's – la măcelar

at the doctor's – la doctor

at the Miller's – la familia Miller

Notă: Și aici folosim genitivul plural, când sunt mai mulți posesori.

► adesea la nume de state

Exemplu: Britain's problems – problemele Marii Britanii

The of-Genitive

Genitivul cu „of”

Formarea genitivului cu „of”

Singular: „of” + articol/pronume + substantiv la singular

Exemplu: the colour of the car – culoarea automobilului

Plural: „of” + articol/pronume + substantiv la plural

Exemplu: the colour of the cars – culoarea automobilelor

Genitivul cu „of” se folosește:

► la denumiri de lucruri

Exemplu: the end of the road – capătul străzii

► la persoane, când urmează un *atribut lung*.

Exemplu: the house of our reporter stationed in London – casa reporterului nostru staționat la Londra.

Double Genitive

Genitivul dublu

Genitivul dublu este o combinație din genitivul cu „of” și genitivul cu „-s”.

Exemplu: a play of Shakespeare's – una din piesele lui Shakespeare

Genitivul dublu se folosește:

► cu *persoane*, dacă trebuie exprimată o *relație parțială*

Exemplu: a friend of Peter's – un prieten de-al lui Petru (unul din prietenii lui Petru; el are așadar și alți prieteni)

► după *a, some, any, several* sau *numeral* + substantiv.

Exemplu: some of Peter's books – câteva din cărțile lui Petru

Formare

Folosire

Folosire

The s-Genitive without a Referent

Genitivul cu „-s” fără cuvânt de referință

Genitivul cu „-s” poate exista fără un cuvânt de referință după el, când:

- un substantiv de ja amintit nu trebuie repetat.

Exemplu: If you haven't got a bag, you can have my mother's (bag).

Dacă nu ai geantă, poți s-o iei pe a mamei mele.

- la magazine, apartamente etc. când substantivul „house”, „flat” etc. se sub. înțelege.

Exemplu: at the Baker's [house] – la brutărie

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Write the s-genitive.

Scrieți genitivul cu „-s”.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. (my cat) toys | 16. (your aunt) invitation |
| 2. (mother) purse | 17. (the Smiths) house |
| 3. (the ladies) hairdresser | 18. (our neighbours) garden |
| 4. (Fred) room | 19. (the dog) collar |
| 5. (women) magazines | 20. (the secretaries) typewriters |
| 6. (my sister) birthday | 21. (my little brother) bike |
| 7. (father) lighter | 22. (the boss) desk |
| 8. (the girls) handbags | 23. (my brother) keys |
| 9. (James) uniform | 24. (Anne) camera |
| 10. (a five minutes) walk | 25. (my friends) children |
| 11. (grandfather) armchair | 26. (tomorrow) date |
| 12. (today) newspaper | 27. (Mr Carter) argument |
| 13. (the greengrocer) | 28. (the morning) post |
| 14. (America) government | 29. (my parents) decision |
| 15. (the chemist) | 30. (the students) room |

II. Write the Genitive. Use either -s or of- Genitive.

Scrieți genitivul. Folosiți fie genitivul cu „-s”, fie pe cel cu „of”.

- | | |
|----------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. (the garden) wall | 3. (the book) page |
| 2. (tea) cup | 4. (3 minutes) discussion |

- (the bird) cage
- (my employer) office
- (the picture) frame
- (the briefcase) loss
- (Shakespeare) work
- (Madame Tussaud)
- (London) university
- (last month) business
- (Mr Red) secretary
- (the article) headline
- at the (Porters)
- (the letter) length
- (the teachers) room

- (the old man) coat
- (the Beatles) records
- (the manager) salary
- (the door) lock
- (the waiter) purse
- (the book) size
- (the guests) order
- (the men) suitcases
- (the painting) colour
- (my sister) CD-player
- (my friend) party
- (Paul) birthday
- (the flowers) growth

Final Test: The Noun

Test

Test final: Substantivul

Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

- Veștile de ieri au fost șocante.
- Unul dintre colegii domnului Grant s-a îmbolnăvit.
- Mulțimea stătea de jur împrejur, când am ajuns, și toți așteptau la brutărie să capete un autograf al sportivului.
- După o ședință de două ore, membrii clubului erau cam obosiți.
- Echipajul avionului face grevă acum. Va trebui să zburăm cu unul din avioanele particulare ale șefului meu.
- A doua din ideile lui Karl pare să fie cea mai bună.
- Pijamaua lui Davis a dispărut iar. Va trebui să ia una de-a lui Tom.
- Toată averea cerșetorului consta dintr-un geamantan și un pantalon vechi de uniformă.
- Grupa lucrează încă la proiectul său, dar situația financiară a firmei va pune curând capăt proiectului.
- Prin explozia sobei cu gaz s-au provocat mari pagube.

The Article

Articolul

În limba engleză există **articol hotărât (definite)** și **articol nehotărât (indefinite)**. Nu există forme diferite pentru masculin, feminin sau neutru.

Forme

Articol hotărât

the

Articol nehotărât

a(n)

The Definite Article

Articolul hotărât

Pronun-
ție

În fața unei vocale (a, e, i, o, u) articolul hotărât „the” este pronunțat [ði:] în loc de [ðə].

Exemplu: the book [ðə]: the orange [ði:]

dar: the university [ðə], deoarece nu [u] este primul sunet care se pronunță, ci [j].

Use of the Definite Article

Folosirea articolului hotărât

Omission of the Definite Article

Omisiunea articolului hotărât

Elemen-
te spe-
ciale

Fără articol hotărât

► a) *noțiuni abstracte*, ca de ex.
life, time, peace, nature, work, history, society etc.

b) *denumiri de substanțe*, ca de ex.
bread, coal, water etc.

c) *denumiri de specii la plural*, ca de ex.
children, pupils, animals etc.

Premisa este ca ele să fie folosite în sens general.

► la *nume proprii* și *denumiri geografice* la singular (de ex. țări, munți, lacuri etc.)

Exemplu: Buckingham Palace is near Trafalgar Square. – Palatul Buckingham se află în apropierea Pieței Trafalgar.

Excepții frecvente: the Tower of London

the High Street

the City

the Golden Gate Bridge

the British Museum

the World Trade Center

the White House

și râuri, de ex. the Rhine

► la *numele de luni, zilele săptămânii, anotimpuri și ore de masă*.

Exemplu: December was very cold. – Decembrie a fost foarte friguros.

Excepții: in the morning/evening/night/ ...

during the afternoon/night/...

throughout the day/afternoon/ ...

Articolul hotărât apare când trebuie explicate noțiunile mai îndeaproape.

Exemplu: The dinner I had with Sue was great.

► la *numele de instituții* ca de ex.

church, college, hospital, prison, school, university, atunci când nu este vizată clădirea, ci funcția sa.

Exemplu: Every Sunday I go to church. – Eu merg în fiecare duminică la biserică.

dar: There is a school near the church. – Există o școală lângă biserică (în apropierea clădirii).

► cu „by” + *mijloace de transport*

Exemplu: I go by train. – Eu merg cu trenul.

► a) înaintea lui „most of”.

Exemplu: Most of the students were in time. – Cei mai mulți dintre elevi au fost punctuali.

b) înaintea lui „most” (majoritatea, cea mai mare parte).

Exemplu: Most students were in time. – Majoritatea elevilor au fost punctuali.

dar: „most” ca denumire a cantității poate sta cu sau fără articol.

Exemplu: He made (the) most mistakes. – El a făcut cele mai multe greșeli.

► în următoarele *expresii*:

to be in office	– a fi în serviciu
to be in opposition	– a fi în opoziție
to be at hand	– a fi la îndemână
to be in power	– a fi la putere
to keep in mind	– a păstra în amintire/a ține minte
to come to light	– a ieși la lumină
to take in hand	– a lua în mână
to get out of hand	– a-ți ieși din obicei
to lose courage	– a-și pierde curajul
to lose sight of s. th.	– a nu mai vedea ceva
to put to flight	– a pune pe fugă
to take flight	– a o lua la fugă
to shake hands	– a da mâna
at first sight	– la prima vedere
out of sight, out of mind	– ochii care nu se văd se uită
in practice	– în practică

Inclusion of the Definite Article

Folosirea articolului hotărât

Elemen-
te speci-
fice

► la instrumente muzicale

Exemplu: He plays the guitar. – El cântă la gitară.► după *all, both, half, double, twice* etc.**Exemplu:** He drove at double the speed. – El mergea cu viteză dublă.► în următoarele *expresii*:

in the absence of	– în absența
by the help of	– cu ajutorul
in the presence of	– în prezența
to be out of the question	– a fi în afara discuției

Articolul hotărât nu poate sta singur. Dacă lipsește substantivul, articolul *introduce* termenul de substituție „one” sau, pentru a înlocui un substantiv la plural, „ones”.

Exemplu: Which picture do you like best? – The one in the window.
Care tablou îți place cel mai mult? – Cel din fereastră.
Which cars do you like best? – The ones over there.
Care mașini îți plac cel mai mult? – Cele de acolo.

The Indefinite Article

Articolul nehotărât

Înainte a unei vocale (a, e, i, o, u) se folosește „an” în loc de „a”.

Exemplu: a book

an orange

dar: an hour, deoarece primul sunet pronunțat este [a], nu [h].

Use of the Indefinite Article

Folosirea articolului nehotărât

Inclusion of the Indefinite Article

Folosirea articolului nehotărât

► împreună cu nume de *meserii*, membri ai unor *grupuri etnice, naționalități, grupări religioase* sau *partide politice*, dacă persoana este caracterizată ca reprezentant al unui asemenea grup.

Exemplu: I am a mechanic. – Eu sunt mecanic.

Excepții: a) Fără „a/an” se fac desemnări de titluri sau ranguri cu „of”.

Exemplu: the rank of captain – rangul de căpitan

b) După „turn” (a deveni) nu se folosește „a/an”.

Exemplu: He turned Democrat. – El a devenit democrat.► între „as” și (*atribut +*) *substantiv*.**Exemplu:** I got the book as a present. – Am primit cartea cadou.

He is known as a good friend. – El este cunoscut ca un bun prieten.

► în următoarele *expresii*:

to be at an end	– a fi la sfârșit
to come to an end	– a ajunge la sfârșit
to be in a hurry	– a se grăbi
to be in a good temper/mood	– a fi bine dispus
it's a pity	– este păcat
to have a good appetite	– a avea apetit bun
to have a fancy for s.th.	– a găsi o plăcere în
to have a headache/temperature	– a avea dureri de cap/febră
to make a noise	– a face gălăgie
to make it a condition	– a face din ea o condiție
to make it a rule	– a face din ea o regulă
to seek a quarrel	– a căuta ceartă

Formu

Elemen-
te speci-
fice

to take a great interest in	– a avea un interes deosebit pentru
as a rule	– de regulă
as a whole	– ca un tot
at a distance	– de departe
for a change	– pentru o schimbare
in a friendly manner	– într-un mod prietenos
in a great measure	– într-o mare măsură
without a break	– fără întrerupere
without a ticket	– fără bilet

- în fața indicațiilor de *cantitate, măsură și timp* cu sensul de „per/pe”.

Exemplu: Sugar costs 60 p a kilo. – Zahărul costă 60 pence kilogramul.

- după *such, half, quite, rather, what, so + adjectiv* și după *too + adjectiv*, dar numai la noțiuni numărabile, adică numai la acelea care pot avea în fața „multe/puține”.

Exemplu: such a nice house – o casă atât de drăguță
too difficult a question – o problemă prea grea
dar: such nonsense – așa o prostie („nonsense” este nenumărabil)

- la numere cu sensul de „one”.

Exemplu: a hundred (one hundred) – o sută

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

- I. Put „a” or „an” in front of the words.
Puneți „a” sau „an” în fața cuvintelor.

1. cup of tea	11. order	21. ideal solution
2. old lady	12. room	22. apple
3. end	13. bike	23. tree
4. pencil	14. roadmap	24. error
5. action	15. van	25. clock
6. dress	16. umbrella	26. old house
7. sign	17. honour	27. wall
8. American businessman	18. telephone	28. desk
9. window	19. English book	29. building
10. radio	20. table	30. street

- II. Put in „a” or „an”, but only where necessary.
Completați cu „a” sau „an”, numai dacă este necesar.

- Pam has ... nice sister.
- He went out without ... umbrella.
- I was in ... hurry, so I forgot to buy ... ticket.
- He was treated as ... good friend.
- Susan's father is ... artist.
- I have ... terrible headache.
- Mary Stuart was ... Catholic.
- The shop sells about ... hundred fridges ... year.
- What ... wonderful castle!
- This student visited London in ... June.
- His car does 90 miles ... hour.
- Our neighbour is rather ... nice man.
- They live in ... bungalow at the seaside.
- ... certain Mr Smith wants to speak to you.
- We usually watch ... film at 7 o'clock.
- As ... coach he was ... great success.
- I want to become ... engineer.
- He is not in ... good temper today.
- We haven't had such ... good weekends for years.
- Sally was ... stewardess before she became ... actress.

- III. Put in „the” where necessary.
Completați cu „the”, dacă este necesar.

- ... life is short.
- ... life of Charlie Chaplin was very interesting.
- They charged us double ... price, because we were tourists.
- Don't be late for ... dinner.
- When does ... school begin?
- He works at ... hospital in ... Main Street.
- ... gold is more expensive than ... silver.
- ... lady over there is ... waitress.
- The workers are painting ... walls of ... prison.
- ... bread is made from ... flour.
- I can't keep ... name in ... mind.
- ... students are often lazy.
- On ... Sunday before our holidays we went to see ... Grandma.

14. Many people spend their lunchtime at ... Hyde Park.
15. ... Museum of London shows ... history of ... town.
16. In ... absence of ... Mr Bat ... decision was made.
17. Listen! Sue is playing ... piano.
18. ... most children like sweets.
19. Every morning my father goes to ... work by ... tube.
20. During ... afternoon it got colder.

IV. Put the missing articles (definite or indefinite) in the right place.

Puneți articolul care lipsește (hotărât sau nehotărât) în locul potrivit.

1. I have never seen such beautiful pullover.
2. He had already drunk half bottle of wine when I came home.
3. It's too absurd story to believe.
4. Tom is quite nice boy.
5. Both parents were ill.
6. He is regarded as good lawyer.
7. This sherry is £ 5.50 bottle.
8. What good view!
9. Half sum could be raised.
10. Don't be in such hurry.

Final Test: The Article

Test final: Articolul

I. Put in „a”, „an” or „the” where necessary.

Completați cu „a”, „an” sau „the” dacă este necesar.

1. Hans had to stay in ... hospital for 2 weeks.
2. In this photo you can see ... Tower of London.
3. Last week I saw rather ... nice dress in the shop-window.
4. ... Turkey is ... very interesting country.
5. How quickly ... time passes.
6. ... most people in this town are steelworkers.
7. ... eagles can fly very high.
8. ... Mont Blanc is ... highest mountain in Europe.
9. Many employees think that ... Monday is ... worst day of ... week.

10. You have to take ... medicine three times ... day.
11. We can talk about it at ... lunch.
12. ... school begins at 8 o'clock.
13. We can go by ... bus for ... change.
14. He goes on holidays twice ... year.
15. Mr Moore turned ... Socialist.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Natura este câteodată înfiorătoare.
2. Munca pe care o fac acum este plicticoasă.
3. După bacalaureat, fiul meu va urma cursurile Universității.
4. Administratorul a fixat un difuzor pe acoperișul școlii.
5. Când Simon a văzut câinele, a luat-o la fugă.
6. De regulă secretara noastră este mereu de încredere.
7. El este un tânăr atât de dificil.
8. Ca bun prieten, pot să-ți dau următorul sfat.
9. Ieri a fost o zi cam friguroasă.
10. Peter este un băiat destul de puternic. El are mereu un apetit bun.
11. El a lucrat 5 ore fără întrerupere.
12. Chiar este păcat, că nu poți veni.
13. Majorității elevilor nu le place gramatica.
14. Unchiul meu lucrează ca psihiatru în închisoare.
15. Unul din pacienții săi este „Big Sam”, care stă de cinci ani în închisoare.

The Adjective

Adjectivul

Un adjectiv servește la desemnarea însușirilor unui substantiv. În limba engleză adjectivul *nu* se modifică după **număr (singular sau plural)**, **gen (masculin, feminin, neutru)** și **caz**.

Exemplu: the blue car – the blue cars/automobilul albastru – automobilele albastre

Funcțiile adjectivului

Funcții

- Dacă un adjectiv se află înaintea substantivului, atunci este atribut pentru substantiv. Se poate vorbi despre *folosirea atributivă*.

Exemplu: The little boy plays outside. – Băiețelul se joacă afară.
„Little” este atribut pentru „boy”.

- Dacă un adjectiv face parte din predicat, atunci se poate vorbi despre *folosirea predicativă*.

Exemplu: The car is new. – Automobilul este nou.

Predicat

- Adjectivele pot fi folosite ca substantiv. (*gerundiv*) (adjectiv verbal cu sens pasiv)

Exemplu: the poor – săracii

- Un adjectiv poate fi folosit ca substantiv, când este precedat de articol și trebuie desemnată o grupă. Adjectivul nu are plural în „-s”, dar se construiește cu un verb la plural.

Exemplu: The blind have a special reading system. – Orbii au un procedeu special de lectură.

Dacă adjectivul se referă la o singură persoană (nu la totalitatea persoanelor), atunci după adjectiv trebuie să urmeze un substantiv.

Exemplu: the blind man ...

- Un adjectiv poate să fie folosit ca substantiv, când se referă la ceva abstract. În acest caz sensul de singular are prioritate și verbul stă la singular.

Exemplu: The good doesn't always win. – Binele nu învinge întotdeauna.

Dacă se referă la ceva concret, după adjectiv trebuie să urmeze „thing” sau ceva asemănător.

Exemplu: The good thing about the story was ... – Partea bună a poveștii a fost.....

The Comparison of the Adjective

Gradele de comparație ale adjectivului

Gradele de comparație ale adjectivului din limba engleză sunt: gradul **pozitiv**, gradul **comparativ** și gradul **superlativ**.

Exemplu: Positive (pozitiv) : nou – new
Comparative (comparativ): mai nou – newer
Superlative (superlativ) : cel mai nou – (the) newest

The Regular Comparison with „-er”/„-est”

Comparația regulată cu „-er”/„-est”

Desinențele „-er” (comparativ) și „-est” (superlativ) se aplică următoarelor adjective:

Regula de bază

- *Adjective monosilabice*

Exemplu: low – lower – lowest

jos – mai jos – cel mai jos

high – higher – highest

înalt – mai înalt – cel mai înalt

- *Adjective bisilabice terminate în „-er”, „-le”, „-ow”, „-y”.*

Exemplu: clever – cleverer – cleverest

istet – mai istet – cel mai istet

simple – simpler – simplest

simplic – mai simplu – cel mai simplu

Particularități de ortografie:

- y devine i.

Exemplu: easy – easier – easiest

- dispariția „-e”-ului final mut

Exemplu: large – larger – largest

- Dublarea consoanelor finale după vocală finală accentuată (a, e, i, o, u).

Exemplu: thin – thinner – thinnest

Ortografie

The Regular Comparison with „more”/„most”

Comparația regulată cu „more”/„most”

Regula
de bază

Următoarele adjective își formează gradele de comparație cu „more” (comparativ) și „most” (superlativ):

- *Adjective bisilabice*, care nu se termină în „-er”, „-le”, „-ow”, „-y”.

Exemplu: useful – more useful – most useful
 folositor – mai folositor – cel mai folositor

- *Adjective cu trei sau mai multe silabe*

Exemplu: interesting – more interesting – most interesting
 interesant – mai interesant – cel mai interesant

The Irregular Comparison

Comparația neregulată

Excepții

Unele adjective își formează gradele de comparație în mod neregulat.

good	– better	– best
well	– better	– best
bad	– worse	– worst
ill	– worse	– worst
little (mic)	– smaller	– smallest
little (puțin)	– less	– least
much	– more	– most
many	– more	– most

Adjectives with Different Comparison Forms

Adjective cu forme diferite ale gradelor de comparație

Elemen-
te speci-
fice

Unele adjective au două forme de comparativ sau superlativ cu moduri diferite de folosire:

- late – later – latest (temporal)
 late – latter – latter (înșiruire)
 ► far – further/farther – furthest/farthest (distanță în spațiu)
 far – further – --- („mai departe”, cu sensul figurat de „în plus”)

► near	– nearer	– nearest	(local)
near	– ---	– next	(înșiruire)
► old	– older	– oldest	(general)
old	– elder	– eldest	(membrii familiei)

Sentences with Comparisons

Comparația în propoziție

- pentru exprimarea unei *egalități* (comparativul de egalitate):

as + (pozitiv) + as

Exemplu: Linda is as clever as Bill. – Linda este tot atât de isteată ca Bill.

- pentru a exprima *inegalitatea* (comparativul de inferioritate):

not as + (pozitiv) + as

Exemplu: Linda is not as tall as Bill. – Linda nu este așa de înaltă ca Bill.

sau:

less + (pozitiv) + than

Exemplu: Linda is less tall than Bill. – Linda este mai scundă ca Bill.

Notă: Dacă după „than” urmează un pronume personal, acesta apare la dativ sau acuzativ-„object case” (de ex. me, him, her etc.)

- pentru exprimarea unui *grad mai înalt de comparare* (comparativul de superioritate):

(comparativ) + than

Exemplu : Susan is taller than Mary. – Susan este mai înaltă decât Mary.

- pentru a exprima *cel mai înalt grad de comparare*:

the + (superlativ).

Exemplu: The tower is the highest in the world. – Turnul este cel mai înalt din lume.

- pentru a exprima o *gradare treptată*:

(comparativ) + and + (comparativ)

Exemplu: The situation is getting worse and worse. – Situația este din ce în ce mai rea.

Notă: la adjectivele care își formează gradul de comparație cu „more”/„most”, gradarea treptată se exprimă cu „more and more”.

Exemplu: The discussion got more and more interesting. – Discuția devenea din ce în ce mai interesantă.

- pentru a exprima „*cu cât...cu atât*”:

The + (comparativ) (...) the + (comparativ) (...)

Exemplu: The angrier the teacher got, the louder the children became.

Cu cât era mai furios profesorul, cu atât erau copiii mai gălăgioși.

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Write down the comparatives and superlatives of the following adjectives.

Formați comparativul și superlativul următoarelor adjective:

- | | | |
|---------------|---------------|--------------------|
| 1. clean | 11. great | 21. efficient |
| 2. hot | 12. narrow | 22. nervous |
| 3. radical | 13. small | 23. cheap |
| 4. thirsty | 14. young | 24. dirty |
| 5. nice | 15. quick | 25. characteristic |
| 6. soft | 16. polite | 26. sunny |
| 7. happy | 17. large | 27. pretty |
| 8. democratic | 18. difficult | 28. lucky |
| 9. thick | 19. cool | 29. ugly |
| 10. fat | 20. simple | 30. competent |

II. Translate the following expressions.

Traduceți următoarele expresii:

- mai ușor ca (easy)
- așa de scump ca (expensive)
- cu cât mai devreme, cu atât mai bine (soon/good)
- cel mai mic (small)
- așa de frumos ca (nice)
- nu atât de bătrân ca (old)
- nu așa mare ca (big)
- tot mai scump (expensive)
- cel mai bun (good)
- mai leneș decât (lazy)
- atât de ieftin ca (cheap)
- mai lung decât (long)
- tot mai bun (good)
- cel mai dificil (difficult)
- mai puțin drăguț ca (nice)
- cel mai interesant (interesting)
- mai nou decât (new)
- atât de gros ca (thick)
- mai puțin politicos ca (polite)
- cu cât mai mulți copii, cu atât mai vioi (many/lively)
- atât de obosit ca (tired)
- cel mai bogat (rich)
- nu atât de lung ca (long)
- mai însetat decât (thirsty)

Final Test: The Adjective

Test final: adjectivul

Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

- Bogații pot să-și permită personal de serviciu. (servants).
- Acest exercițiu este mai dificil decât cel dinainte.
- Mașina tatălui meu este aproape tot atât de rapidă ca o mașină sport.
- Di Pit este cel mai bătrân locuitor al acestui oraș.
- Alimentele sunt din ce în ce mai scumpe.
- Uneori tinerii nu îi înțeleg pe bătrâni.
- Fratele meu mai mare lucrează la o bancă.
- Poliția face alte investigații în continuare (investigations).
- Unde este următoarea stație de autobuz ?
- Elevii devin tot mai copilăroși .
- La concert a venit mai puțină lume decât a fost de așteptat.
- Prietenul meu este cu doi ani mai mare ca mine.
- Cu cât are el mai mult, cu atât mai mult vrea.
- El este mai puțin prost, decât am crezut.
- Prietenul meu este cel mai inteligent băiat din clasă.
- În ultima jumătate a secolului, s-a ajuns la dificultăți economice.
- Sam nu este atât de bun la școală cum este Kelly.
- Cu cât vorbește el mai mult, cu atât se îmbunătățește engleza sa.
- Tot mai puțină lume merge la slujbele bisericești.
- Amănunte în plus vă voi comunica mai târziu.

The Adverb

Adverbul

În limba engleză există două feluri de adverbe:

- ▶ **Adverbe propriu-zise** (de ex. here, there, now etc.), care reprezintă preponderent date despre loc și timp.
- ▶ **Adverbe derivate din adjective** (de ex. nicely)

Vorbim de „**locuțiune adverbială**” (**adverbial phrase**) atunci când adverbul care însoțește un verb se transformă în parte de propoziție de sine stătătoare. Sunt considerate locuțiuni adverbiale și combinațiile de prepoziții și substantive.

Exemplu: at home

The Formation of Adverbs

Modul de formare al adverbilor

Formarea adverbilor:

Formare

Multe adverbe derivate se formează prin adăugarea terminației „-ly” la adjective.

Exemplu: nice (adjective) – nicely (adverb)

La unele adjective sunt valabile reguli speciale:

Excepții

- ▶ La adjectivele plurisilabice y se transformă în i.
Exemplu: easy – easily
- ▶ După consoană dispare „-le”
Exemplu: simple – simply
- ▶ „-e” final mut dispare la „due”, „true”, „whole”.
Exemplu: whole – wholly
true – truly

- ▶ Dacă un adjective se termină deja în „-ly”, atunci adverbul se formează cu „in a...way”.

Exemplu: friendly – in a friendly way

- ▶ Adverbul pentru „difficult” este „with difficulty”.
- ▶ Adverbul pentru „good” este „well”
- ▶ Dacă adjectivele se termină în „-ic” atunci adverbul se formează cu „-ally”

Exemplu: systematic – systematically

Excepție: public – publicly

- ▶ Adjectivele terminate în „-ll” formează adverbul numai cu „-y”

Exemplu: dull – dully

- ▶ Adjectivele și adverbii au câteodată aceeași formă și același sens. Dintre ele fac parte: daily, hourly, weekly, monthly, quarterly, yearly etc.

Dar și: early, likely, fast, long, far, straight, low.

- ▶ Adjectivele și adverbii au câteodată aceeași formă, dar sensuri diferite. Dintre ele fac parte:

Noțiunea	Ca adjective	Ca adverb
well	sănătos	bine
ill	bolnav	prost
still	liniștit	încă
only	unic	numai

- ▶ Unele adjective au două forme adverbiale, care pot avea sensuri asemănătoare sau diferite. Dintre ele fac parte:

Adjectivele	1. Adverb	2. Adverb
right (corect)	right (corect)	rightly (bine, cum se cuvine)
slow (încet)	slow (încet)	slowly (încet)
hard (tare)	hard (tare)	hardly (abia)
fair (bun, frumos)	fair (corect)	fairly (aproximativ)
deep (adânc)	deep (adânc)	deeply (profund)
pretty (drăguț)	pretty (aproximativ)	prettily (drăguț)
high (înalt)	high (înalt)	highly (extrem de)
late (târziu)	late (târziu)	lately (în ultima vreme)
most (cel mai mult)	most (cel mai mult)	mostly (cel mai adesea)
just (drept)	just (numai)	justly (drept)
ready (gata)	ready (gata)	readily (prompt)
short (scurt)	short (scurt)	shortly (în scurt timp)
express (clar, expres)	express (rapid)	expressly (expres)

The Comparison of Adverbs

Comparația adverbelor

Regula de bază

- Adverbele propriu-zise și adverbele cu forme asemănătoare cu adjectivele formează gradele de comparație cu „-er”/„-est”.

Exemplu: soon – sooner – soonest

fast – faster – fastest

early – earlier – earliest

- Adverbele terminate în „-ly” formează gradele de comparație cu „more”/„most”.

Exemplu: easily – more easily – most easily

- Unele adverbe au forme neregulate de comparație. Dintre ele fac parte:

well	– better	– best
much	– more	– most
little	– less	– least
badly/ill	– worse	– worst
near	– nearer	– nearest
---	---	– next
far	– further/farther	– furthest/farthest
---	– further	---
late	– later	– latest
---	---	– last

Excepții

Ca și la adjectivele din care au fost derivate, sensul dublu este corelat adesea cu forme duble. Vezi pag. 162.

The Position of Adverbs and Adverbial Phrases

Poziția adverbelor și a locuțiunilor adverbiale

Adverbele și locuțiunile adverbiale au poziții precise, bine determinate în propoziție. Unde poate sta un adverb sau o locuțiune adverbială, depinde de sensul pe care îl are. Se pot deosebi următoarele categorii de adverbe:

Adverbs of Manner

Adverbe de mod

Ele descriu modul, metoda prin care se execută o acțiune (de ex. quickly, easily, in a friendly way etc.). Din această grupă fac parte în special adverbele terminate în „-ly”.

Adverbele de mod pot avea trei poziții în propoziție:

- La sfârșitul propoziției.

Exemplu: He repaired the car **easily**.

- În fața verbului predicativ sau după primul verb auxiliar, dacă trebuie accentuat verbul.

Exemplu: He **easily** repaired the car.

He has **quickly** eaten his lunch.

Notă: Ele stau după verbul predicativ, dacă nu urmează nici un complement.

Exemplu: He spoke **slowly**.

- La începutul propoziției, dacă ea trebuie să formeze un cadru pentru propoziția următoare.

Exemplu: **Silently**, he left the house.

Poziție

Adverbs of Frequency

Adverbe de frecvență

Ele indică de câte ori se execută o acțiune (de ex. often, seldom, always, once, monthly, generally etc.). Adverbele de frecvență pot sta în trei locuri în propoziție:

- La sfârșitul propoziției, dacă este vorba de adverbe care exprimă o anumită frecvență (de ex. once, daily, weekly etc.).

Exemplu: She goes shopping **weekly**.

Notă: Dacă aceste adverbe se află la sfârșitul propoziției împreună cu alte adverbe, atunci se păstrează următoarea ordine:

adverb de loc – adverb de frecvență – adverb de timp

Exemplu: She went shopping **in London twice last week**.

loc frec-
vență timp

- În fața verbului predicativ, respectiv după primul verb auxiliar, dacă este vorba de adverbe care exprimă o frecvență nedeterminată (de ex. usually, always, sometimes etc.).

Poziție

Exemplu: She **always** goes shopping on Friday.

She has **always** done her shopping on Friday.

Notă: Dacă se folosește „to be” ca verb predicativ, atunci adverbul stă după el.

Exemplu: She is **usually** late.

- *La începutul propoziției* pentru a fixa un cadru temporal enunțului care urmează (această poziție nu merge cu „just”).

Exemplu: **Usually**, there aren't many tourists in this area.

Adverbs of Place and Time

Adverbe de loc și de timp

Poziție

Adverbele de loc și timp pot sta *la începutul* sau *la sfârșitul unei propoziții*. Poziția de la începutul propoziției este cel mai adesea folosită atunci când trebuie exprimat un contrast. Dacă aceste 2 tipuri de adverbe apar împreună, este valabilă regula „locul în fața timpului”.

Exemplu: Loc: (in London) I met Paul **in London**.
 Timp: (yesterday) I met Paul **yesterday**.
 Locul în fața timpului (in London yesterday) I met Paul **in London yesterday**.

Adverbs of Degree

Adverbe de grad

Poziție

Adverbele de gradare exprimă o întărire, o slăbire sau o restrângere (de ex. completely, almost, hardly etc.). Ele pot avea trei poziții în propoziție.

- a) Ele stau *în fața verbului predicativ*, respectiv *după primul verb auxiliar*, dacă exprimă o restrângere.

Exemplu: He **hardly** answered me.

He has **hardly** answered me.

- b) Ele stau *în fața verbului predicativ* sau *după ultimul verb auxiliar*, dacă exprimă o întărire.

Exemplu: He **greatly** admired her.

He would have **greatly** admired her.

Excepție: „almost” și „nearly” stau după primul verb auxiliar.

Exemplu: He would **almost** have helped her.

- *La sfârșitul propoziției* pot sta următoarele adverbe de gradare: a bit, a little, a great deal, a lot, by far, for sure, for certain

Exemplu: He didn't like it **a bit**.

- Adverbele de grad, care determină mai îndeaproape un adjectiv sau un adverb, stau *în fața acestui cuvânt*.

Exemplu: He is very nice.

Adverbs Modifying a Whole Sentence

Adverbe care se referă la o întreagă propoziție

Adverbele care se referă la o întreagă propoziție stau *la începutul propoziției*. Dintre ele fac parte: in fact, maybe, naturally, obviously, perhaps, possibly, really, surely, (un)fortunately, (un)luckily.

Exemplu: **Unfortunately**, he couldn't come.

Poziție

Several Adverbs at the End of a Sentence

Mai multe adverbe la sfârșitul propoziției

Dacă la sfârșitul propoziției se află două sau mai multe adverbe, atunci sunt valabile următoarele reguli:

- Adverbele de mod stau în fața adverbilor de loc și de timp

(de ținut minte: M – L – T)

Exemplu: He went slowly to the door.

- Direcția înaintea locului

Exemplu: He went to the shop at the corner.

- Locul înaintea timpului (de ținut minte: L – T)

Exemplu: He went to Spain last summer.

- Timpul exact înaintea timpului inexact

Exemplu: He arrived at 7 o'clock in the morning.

Poziție

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Write down the suitable adverbs.

Scrieți adverbele potrivite.

- | | | | |
|--------------|-----------------|--------------|-------------|
| 1. direct | 10. silly | 19. good | 28. hopeful |
| 2. fast | 11. cheap | 20. sad | 29. basic |
| 3. full | 12. probable | 21. far | 30. wise |
| 4. fantastic | 13. busy | 22. powerful | 31. angry |
| 5. correct | 14. pretty | 23. sweet | 32. whole |
| 6. careful | 15. fair | 24. loud | 33. polite |
| 7. happy | 16. rare | 25. sensible | 34. weekly |
| 8. true | 17. recent | 26. brave | 35. fluent |
| 9. extreme | 18. intelligent | 27. slow | 36. regular |

II. Write down the comparative and superlative of the following adverbs.

Scrieți gradele comparativ și superlativ ale următoarelor adverbe:

- | | | |
|--------------|--------------|-------------|
| 1. well | 9. extremely | 17. gladly |
| 2. slowly | 10. quickly | 18. loudly |
| 3. long | 11. ill | 19. soon |
| 4. quietly | 12. fluently | 20. early |
| 5. deeply | 13. softly | 21. high |
| 6. nervously | 14. nicely | 22. angrily |
| 7. little | 15. prettily | 23. fast |
| 8. much | 16. sweetly | 24. badly |

III. Put the adverbs or adverbial phrases in suitable positions.

Completați cu adverbele sau locuțiunile adverbiale la locul potrivit.

- The student went. (at 7 o'clock/to the bus stop)
- My sister Maud was studying. (in her room/very hard/yesterday/all day)
- He has been. (to London/in his life/never)
- Let's go. (this evening/to the cinema)
- Sue sang. (at the competition/very well/in Oxford/2 days ago)
- The visitors had to wait. (in front of the door/a little while)
- Come! (soon/again)
- He had seen a musical. (never/on stage/before)
- He has been. (twice/in the park/today)
- She walked. (once/before supper)
- He had to stay. (unfortunately/in hospital/for 3 days)
- Our friend helps me. (usually/in the garden/at the weekend)
- The cat was lying. (on the sofa/quietly)
- I go shopping. (seldom/in Paris)

Adverb or Adjective

Adverb sau adjectiv

Depinde de cuvântul de referință dacă trebuie folosit adverbul sau adjectivul.

Un **adjectiv** se referă la un *substantiv sau la o persoană*.**Exemplu:** She is a **nice** girl.She is **nice**.Un **adverb** se poate referi▶ la un *verb***Exemplu:** She sings **nicely**.▶ la un *adjectiv***Exemplu:** She is **seriously** ill.▶ la un *alt adverb*.**Exemplu:** She sings **extremely** well.▶ la o *întreagă propoziție***Exemplu:** **Suddenly**, they left the house.

Iată și câteva excepții:

▶ Verbele care exprimă o *stare* nu sunt însoțite de *nici un adverb*.

Dintre ele fac parte:

to be (a fi)

to become, to get, to grow, to turn (a deveni),

to remain, to stay, to keep (a rămâne),

to seem (a părea)

Exemplu: He remained **silent**.▶ Verbele care exprimă *percepții senzoriale* nu sunt însoțite de *nici un adverb*.

Dintre ele fac parte:

Verb	Sens fără adverb	Sens cu adverb
to look	a arăta	a privi
to feel	a (se) simți	a simți (a pipăi)
to smell	a mirosi (ex. a pește)	a mirosi (cu nasul)
to sound	a suna, a auzi ceva	---
to taste	a avea gust (masa)	a avea gust (în gură)

Regula
de bază

Excepții

Exercises

Exerciții

Decide whether to use adverbs or adjectives.

Hotărâți dacă folosiți adverbe sau adjective.

1. The driver was (serious) hurt in the accident.
2. The damage to the building was very (serious).
3. My grandfather always talks (serious).
4. The dog (usual) barks (loud).
5. The new clerk didn't stick to the (usual) order.
6. The (loud) music from the neighbours sounds (terrible).
7. She was smiling (happy).
8. There is a restaurant called „The (Happy) Eater”.
9. The couple have been (happy) married for 20 years.
10. The mountain is very (high).
11. She speaks with a very (high) voice.
12. She is always (high) (elegant).
13. He told me (surprising) news.
14. (Surprising), he (real) came to the party.
15. He was (surprising) (polite).
16. Mary speaks French very (good).
17. She is a very (good) secretary.
18. I have some (good) news for you.
19. The fire destroyed the house (complete).
20. She won a (complete) dinner set.
21. The house was (complete) empty.
22. The buses run (regular).
23. He should attend class (regular).
24. English is (easy) to learn.
25. English can be learned (easy).
26. You can (easy) wash this pullover yourself.
27. Simon is a (careless) driver.
28. (Especial) when he has had a few drinks, he drives (careless).
29. He shouldn't (real) have a driving-licence.
30. He is a (real) danger to the other people.
31. Both teams seemed to be very (nervous).
32. Your idea sounds very (great).
33. When Paul heard the news, he became very (sad).
34. The doctor (careful) examined the patient.
35. The patient felt very (weak).
36. He didn't look very (good) today.
37. He looked (angry) at the children who had broken the vase.

Final Test: The Adverb

Test final: adverbul

Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Sally arată foarte drăguț în paltonul ei extrem de lung.
2. Mai întâi explicațiile lui au sunat ciudat, apoi ele s-au arătat a fi adevărate.
3. Dacă checul mai rămâne mult în cuptor, nu va mai avea gust așa de bun.
4. Văzuți din avion munții nu mai păreau așa de înalți.
5. Pisica stătea culcată în fața șemineului. Blana ei se simțea moale și caldă.
6. El muncea din răspuțeri, dar izbândea cu greu.
7. Ai gustat deja marmelada cea bună?
8. Kevin este foarte bolnav. Ieri s-a simțit mai rău ca oricând.
9. Când el a auzit deodată un zgomot, a privit enervat în spate.
10. De ce trebuie Sam să se poarte mereu așa prosteste? El este destul de inteligent.
11. Ea se simțea mereu așa de obosită, că abia putea ține ochii deschiși.
12. Fiecare regulă va fi explicată atât de simplu pe cât este posibil.
13. Pacientul îl aștepta nerăbdător pe medic.
14. Din fericire n-a fost rănit grav.
15. Pentru că nu își ia foarte în serios studiul, probabil că nu va face bine la examen.
16. Friptura arată delicios și miroase foarte bine.
17. Ca de obicei bunicul meu stătea pe veranda (porch) îmbietor de caldă.
18. Când el a auzit un zgomot ciudat în pivniță, și-a pipăit prevăzător pistolul.
19. Mary nu vede foarte bine, dar ea este totuși o elevă bună.
20. Lui Sam i-a sunat foarte bine, când a auzit vestea cea bună.

The Pronoun

Pronumele

The Personal Pronoun

Pronumele personal

Regula
de bază

Pronumele personale stau în locul **persoanelor, animalelor, obiectelor**.
Pronumele personale pot fi, ca și substantivele în locul cărora stau, subiect
complement într-o propoziție.

Exemplu: Peter is at home. – (Peter _ subiect)

He is at home. (he _ Peter – subiect)

I saw Peter. (Peter – complement). I saw **him**. (him – Peter – complement)

Pronumele personale au așadar o **formă corespunzătoare subiectului** și o **formă corespunzătoare complementului**. Deoarece în limba engleză nu există o deosebire între dativ și acuzativ, există numai o singură formă a complementului.

Forme

Persoană		Forma subiectului (la întrebarea „cine sau ce?”)	Forma complementului (la întrebarea „cui, pe cine sau pe ce?”)
persoana I	singular	I	me
persoana II		you	you
persoana III		he, she, it	him, her, it
persoana I	plural	we	us
persoana II		you	you
persoana III		they	them

În locul formei de subiect apare forma de complement

Excepții

► În **comparație** după „as” și „than”.

Exemplu: Paul is taller than me. – Paul este mai înalt decât mine.

► În **răspunsuri scurte** la întrebări cu „who”.

Exemplu: Who is it? – Cine este?

It's us. – Noi suntem.

► În **propoziții prescurtate**, în care pronumele apare fără predicat.

Exemplu: My brother wanted to come not me. – Fratele meu a vrut să vină, nu eu.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

1. Replace the underlined words by personal pronouns.
Înlocuiți cuvintele subliniate cu pronume.

1. Mary can't find her handbag.
2. I met the Millers last week.
3. The book is on the table.
4. Did you see the photos?
5. Father's pipe is in the kitchen.
6. I like the house very much.
7. He got his new car yesterday.
8. The telephone is out of order.
9. Did you see Simon and his brother?
10. My mother baked the cake yesterday.
11. I've lost my pen.
12. The dog is in the garden. His name is Henry.
13. Don't forget to water the plants.
14. Our suitcases are still in the car.
15. We've forgotten the records.
16. Leave the TV on, please.
17. The worker repaired the house.
18. I got a present from my father.
19. Where are my cigarettes?
20. My father and I repaired the bike ourselves.
21. Can you do the washing-up for me?
22. The church was built in the 18 th century.
23. Please, shut the door.
24. I couldn't find your trousers.
25. The boys are doing their homework.

26. The lady has just left the house.

27. The butler opened the door.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Eu gădesc că tu ești mai drăguță decât ele toate.
2. Cine bate acolo? – Eu sunt.
3. Poți să mi-l prezinți?
4. V-am văzut de-abia ieri.
5. Eu nu le-am văzut niciodată aici.
6. El este tot atât de în vârstă ca și mine.
7. Cine vine cu mine la cinema? – Eu.
8. Poți să le dai, te rog, scrisorile?
9. Trebuie să-ți faci mereu datoria.
10. Se spune că iarna va fi foarte rece.

The Possessive Pronoun

Pronumele posesiv

Regula
de bază

Pronumele posesive exprimă un raport de posesiune sau apartenență. Ele pot fi folosite fie *atributiv* (în fața substantivului), fie *substantival* (singure, cu referire la un substantiv precedent).

Exemplu: atributiv: This is **my** pullover.

substantival: This is not your pullover. It's **mine**.

Persoană		Atributiv	Substantival
persoana I	singular	my	mine
persoana II		your	yours
persoana III		his, her, its	his, hers, (its)
persoana I	plural	our	ours
persoana II		your	yours
persoana III		their	theirs

Este de notat că:

▶ Pronumele posesive se folosesc atunci când se vorbește despre *părți ale corpului* și *obiecte de îmbrăcăminte*.

Exemplu: He had his hands in his pockets. – El își ținea mâinile în buzunare.

She shook her head. – Ea dădu din cap.

▶ Pronumele posesive apar și pe lângă *noțiuni abstracte* ca „life”, „death”, „mind” etc., atunci când este indicată apartenența lor la anumite persoane.

Exemplu: They lost their lives. – Ei și-au pierdut viața.

Substantivele apar, în această situație, de obicei la plural (de ex. lives), dacă se referă la mai multe persoane.

Întărirea pronumelui posesiv prin „own”

„Own” („propriu”, „însuși”) poate fi folosit numai în legătură cu pronume posesive atributive. Următoarele reguli sunt valabile:

▶ *Pronumele posesiv* + „own” stau în fața substantivului.

Exemplu: He did it with his own hands. – El a făcut-o cu propriile mâini.

▶ „Of” + pronume posesiv + „own” stau după substantiv.

Exemplu: He has a house of his own. – El are o casă a lui.

▶ Dacă trebuie evitată repetarea unui substantiv deja amintit, atunci folosim *pronumele posesiv* + „own” *singur*.

Exemplu: It's my brother's house, not my own (house). – Este casa fratelui meu, nu a mea.

„Of” + Pronume posesiv

„Of” + pronume posesiv stă după un substantiv, care este legat cu „a” de un numeral sau un pronume demonstrativ.

▶ „Of” + pronume posesiv atributiv + „own” (propriu, însuși)

Exemplu: Have you got a car of your own? – Ai o mașină personală?

▶ „Of” + pronume posesiv substantival (unul, doi, nici unul etc. din ...)

Exemplu: He is a friend of mine. – El este un prieten de-al meu (unul dintre prietenii mei).

Elemen-
te speci-
fice

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Replace the underlined words by a possessive pronoun or add the missing possessive pronouns.

Înlocuiți cuvintele subliniate printr-un pronume posesiv sau completați pronumele posesive care lipsesc.

1. My brother's car is in the garage.
2. Sally's dress is very nice.
3. Have you already met my brother's wife?
4. He is a colleague of my father's.
5. Is this Tom's book?
6. Carol's bike is in front of the house.
7. The ticket collector's uniform is blue.
8. Whose are these records? They must be Sally's.
9. Have the Millers got a garden of ... own?
10. Are those your handkerchiefs? – No, they aren't ...
11. This room is my mother's.
12. Sheila has always been a friend of my sister's.
13. This isn't my pullover. It must be Mary's.
14. The boy has got a room of ... own.
15. My father hurt ... leg.
16. We knew that ... lives were in danger.
17. Carol's and Pat's records are very good.
18. I can't get it out of ... mind.
19. The waitresses' uniforms are usually black.
20. The Duke's house is visited by hundreds of tourists.
21. The boys painted ... faces red.
22. I've got a room of ... own.
23. Sally's report wasn't very good last year.
24. The boys want to spend ... holidays in a camp.
25. Sam hadn't got any money in ... pocket.
26. The students forgot ... bags in the classroom.
27. Mr Meekins is going to meet ... wife at 6 o'clock.
28. The lady never leaves the house without ... hat.
29. The boy scout's meeting place is in Church Road.
30. I seldom forget ... homework.

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Mi-ai văzut tu geanta?
2. Lipsește coperta cărții mele.
3. El este un coleg de-al lui.
4. Peter a avut totdeauna o cameră a lui.
5. Ei au frecventat cursul lor de franceză de trei luni.
6. Acesta nu este geamantanul dvs. El este al meu.
7. Ideea nu-mi iese din minte.
8. Eu am întâlnit-o deja pe sora lui.
9. Casa voastră este foarte drăguță.
10. Ai tu o cameră a ta proprie?

The Interrogative Pronoun

Pronumele interogativ

Pronumele interogative **introduc întrebări**. Alegerea pronumelui interogativ depinde de următorii factori:

- ▶ dacă se întreabă despre o *persoană* sau despre un *lucru*.
- ▶ la care *parte de propoziție* se referă întrebarea (subiect, complement).
- ▶ dacă se întreabă despre persoane sau lucruri dintr-un *număr* exact sau nelimitat.

Partea de propoziție	Întrebare pentru persoane	Întrebare pentru lucruri	Forme
Subiect	→ who (cine?) Who phoned me?	→ what (ce?) What was the result?	
	→ what (ce fel de ...?) What man phoned me?	→ what (ce fel de ...?) What colours do you like?	
	→ which (care?) Which of my friends phoned me?	→ which (care?) Which of the books is missing?	

Forme

Partea de propoziție	Întrebare pentru persoane	Întrebare pentru lucruri
Complement în genitiv	whose (al cui?) Whose car is this?	---
Complement	→ who (whom într-un stil formal) (cui, pe cine?)* Who(m) did you give the book to? Who(m) do you mean? → what (ce fel de ...?) What people do you know? → which (care, pe care?) Which of the boys did you meet?	→ what (ce?)* What do you want to buy? → what (ce fel de ...?) What subjects do you learn? → which (care?) Which subject do you like better – English or French?

„What” sau „which”?

„What” (ce fel de ...) întreabă despre persoane sau lucruri dintr-un număr nelimitat.

Exemplu: What (kind of) people were in the pub ?

What (kind of) books do you like ?

„Which” (care?) întreabă despre persoane sau lucruri dintr-un număr limitat.

Exemplu: Which of the girls is your sister ?

Which city do you prefer, London or Paris ?

Notă: Deoarece „of” + substantiv/pronume exprimă întotdeauna o limitare la o grupă, „-of” poate fi folosit numai cu „which”.

Exemplu: Which of the pullovers do you like best?

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put in „what” or „which”.

Completați cu „what” sau „which”.

- ... handbag is yours, the black or the brown one?
- ... kind of records do you usually buy?
- ... of these flowers would you take?
- ... river is longer, the Thames or the Rhine?
- ... is your telephone number?
- ... kind of sports do you like best?
- ... of the books on the table are yours?
- ... house is yours, number 45 or 46?
- ... comes next?
- ... of you can give me the answer?
- ... people were at the party?
- ... of your friends shall we invite?
- ... way shall we go, this one or that one?
- ... of your brothers works in London?
- ... city has more inhabitants, New York or Munich?
- ... cities have you been to?
- ... car is your father's, the VW or the BMW?
- ... of the two pictures would you take?
- ... size is this dress?
- ... sort of meat do I need for this recipe?

II. Put in the correct interrogative pronoun.

Completați cu pronumele interogativ corect.

- ... shall we do?
- ... are they talking about?
- ... did you help yesterday?
- ... did you do on Sunday?
- Can you see ... is in the living-room.
- ... room is that – Sally's or Maud's?
- ... do you need the tools for?
- I don't know ... keys they are. Maybe they are Pam's.
- ... unit did we get up to last lesson?
- ... of the poems did you like best?
- ... kind of girl is she?

* La întrebările cu „who” sau „what” prepozițiile se pun la urmă, la întrebările cu „whom” prepozițiile se pun în față.

Exemplu: Who are you looking for? For whom are you looking? What are you interested in?

12. ... can tell me the way to the station?
13. ... did you find under the sofa?
14. ... would you like to drink?
15. ... did you lend the book to?
16. ... spoke to you in front of the house?
17. ... is your favourite pudding, apple pie or trifle?
18. ... of you hasn't finished the exercise?
19. ... brother is Tom, Maggy's or Eileen's?
20. ... was taken to hospital?

III. Ask for the underlined words.

Puneți întrebări la cuvintele subliniate.

1. I would like to spend my holidays with my aunt.
2. My father is looking at an English magazine.
3. My favourite pop-group are the Rolling Stones.
4. I was introduced to many interesting people.
5. My brother sold his car to our neighbour.
6. Mr Mud called you half an hour ago.
7. I have to send Patrick the photos at once.
8. The tennis racket is in the wardrobe.
9. The boys are laughing at the new student.
10. There are three cars in front of the hotel. The green one is mine.
11. I have seen this man before.
12. My friend knows Mr Baker.
13. I like science fiction films best.
14. The Guinness Book of Records is published by a brewery.
15. My mother would like to talk to the headmistress.

The Reflexive Pronoun

Pronumele reflexiv

Pronumele reflexive pot îndeplini două funcții:

- Ele pot fi folosite cu *valoare reflexivă* ca pronume reflexive propriu-zise și să marcheze o coincidență a subiectului (S) cu complementul (C).

Exemplu: I bought myself a new dress. – Mi-am cumpărat o rochie nouă.

(S) (C)

- Puteți să *reliefați* puternic un subiect sau un complement.

Notă: Pronumele reflexive de întărire pot sta după substantivele/pronumele pe care trebuie să le scoată în evidență. Dacă substantivul/pronumele respectiv este subiect însă, atunci ele stau la sfârșitul propoziției.

Exemplu: The Duke [himself] opened the door himself. – Ducele însuși a deschis ușa.

(S)
I met the Mayor himself at the meeting. – L-am întâlnit chiar pe primarul însuși la întrunire.
(C)

Persoană		Pronume reflexiv	Forme
persoana I	singular	myself	
persoana II		yourself	
persoana III		himself, herself, itself	
persoana I	plural	ourselves	
persoana II		yourselves	
persoana III		themselves	

Pronumele reflexiv cu „by” se folosește cu sensul „singur”

Exemplu: He did it all by himself – El a făcut totul singur.

Notă:

- După prepozițiile de loc ca „above”, „in front of”, „behind”, „with” etc. în limba engleză se folosesc pronume personale.

Exemplu: He had his sister with him. – El o avea pe sora lui cu el.

- unele verbe nu au pronume reflexiv, așa cum au în alte limbi.

De ex.:	to approach	– a se apropia
	to behave	– a se purta
	to change	– a se schimba
	to complain	– a se plânge
	to dress	– a se îmbrăca
	to happen	– a se întâmpla
	to hide	– a se ascunde
	to hurry	– a se grăbi
	to lie down	– a se culca
	to meet	– a se întâlni

to move	- a se mișca
to recover	- a se odihni
to relax	- a se relaxa
to rely on	- a se baza pe
to sit down	- a se așeza
to turn to	- a se întoarce la
to wonder	- a se mira

Exemplu: I recover

► următoarele verbe stau cu un pronume reflexiv:

to betake oneself	- a se deplasa
to make oneself at home	- a se simți ca acasă
to pride oneself	- a se mândri
to seat oneself	- a se așeza

► Dacă trebuie exprimată cu „se” o relație reciprocă, atunci nu se folosește un pronume reflexiv, ci „each other” sau „one another”.

Exemplu: They looked at each other and smiled. – Ei s-au uitat unul la altul și au zâmbit.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Put in the correct reflexive pronoun.

Completați cu pronumele reflexiv corect.

1. I introduced ... to our new neighbour.
2. She made ... a pullover.
3. The father decided to repair the car ...
4. You'll have to finish your homework ...
5. In the youth hostel we had to make the beds ...
6. I would like to speak to the doctor ..., not his secretary.
7. Grandpa was sitting in the living-room all by ...
8. He helped ... to a second piece of cake.
9. She knew him better than he knew ...
10. The Millers like talking about ...
11. The boss decided to answer the phone call ...

12. Mother made ... a cup of tea.
13. You pride ... very much on your cleverness, don't you, Tom?
14. Good bye, Mary! Enjoy ...!
15. It's really true, I saw it ...
16. I cut ... with a knife.
17. I don't think they'll be able to manage by ...
18. You must look after ... on the journey.
19. She has made ... very popular.
20. Do it ...!

II. Decide whether to use a reflexive or a personal pronoun.

Decideți dacă trebuie folosit un pronume reflexiv sau un pronume personal!

1. Shut the door behind ...!
2. Have we got to do this all by ...?
3. We enjoyed ... very much at the theatre.
4. The boss brought a lot of work with ...
5. When I saw her she had a dog beside ...
6. The model looked at ... in the mirror.
7. Sally is too young to go out by ...
8. My brother ... saw the accident.
9. The elephant washed ...
10. The boys are old enough to look after ...
11. Has your brother got any matches on ...?
12. Suddenly we saw a car in front of ...
13. You really have to solve that problem ...
14. Did your mother paint the picture ...?
15. As the cleaning lady was ill she had to clean the house ...

III. Put in the correct reflexive or personal pronoun if possible.

Folosiți corect pronumele reflexiv sau personal, dacă este posibil.

1. I can't remember ... what his name was.
2. It's raining. You should take your raincoat with ...
3. I would like to see the castle ..., not just a picture.
4. The Queen ... gave him the medal.
5. She liked the ring ... but not the ruby.
6. Take care of ...
7. The accident happened ... at the corner of Church Road.
8. He sat ... down on the armchair.

9. My mother makes most of her dresses ...
10. Little Billy doesn't want to go to the dentist by ...
11. Carol only thinks of ..., never of the rest of the family.
12. Would you please lock the garage door behind ...?
13. They have changed ... a lot since I last met them.
14. Since the workers were on strike, Mr Carter had to do the work ...
15. He told me that it was really true. He had seen it ...
16. People in the Third World must be encouraged to help ...
17. Since she didn't feel well, she lay ... down for a while.
18. What happened ... last week?
19. They met ... in front of the hotel.
20. When I was in London, I saw the Queen ..., not only her guards.
21. What does your father ... think of it?
22. She is a woman who always feels sorry for ...
23. I can't imagine ... living in a big city.
24. The old lady often talks to ...
25. Do you live in this huge house all by ...?

IV. Put in the correct reflexive or personal pronoun or „each other”/„one another”, if possible.

Folosiți pronumele reflexiv sau personal corespunzător sau „each other”/„one another”.

1. Tom and Sue lost ... in the crowd in front of the cinema.
2. We could see ... in the surface of the water.
3. Sally could see ... in the surface of the water.
4. My father and his colleague have known ... for 10 years.
5. Did you cook that delicious meal ...?
6. The Millers and the Coopers are good friends. They always help ...
7. The landlady told me to help ... to another glass of beer.
8. This book is mine. I wrote my name in it ...
9. They didn't say a word. They only looked at ... as if they understood ... without saying anything.
10. When we built our house we had to do a lot of things ...

The Demonstrative Pronoun

Pronumele demonstrativ

Pronumele demonstrativ vizează în mod special o persoană sau un lucru, care este deja cunoscut sau trebuie descris mai îndeaproape.

Singular	Plural
this – acesta de aici	these – aceștia
that – acela	those – aceia

Forme

- ▶ „This” și „these” denumesc ceea ce este apropiat în spațiu/timp (referitor la prezent).
- ▶ „That” și „those” denumesc ceea ce este mai îndepărtat în spațiu/timp (referitor la trecut). „That” și „those” pot să mai fie folosite pentru a exprima un resentiment sau dispreț.

Exemplu: This pullover is nice, but that one over there is much nicer.

Acest pulover este drăguț, dar acela de acolo este mai drăguț.

These keys are mine, those keys on the table are yours.

Aceste chei (aici) îmi aparțin, acele chei de pe masă sunt ale tale.

Whose are those dirty jeans?

Ai cui sunt acești blugi murdari? (dispreț)

Pronumele demonstrative pot fi folosite

- ▶ **atributiv** în fața substantivelor.

Exemplu: Do you know this boy? – Îl cunoști pe acest băiat?

- ▶ **singure** (ca un substantiv):

a) la plural când se referă la un substantiv precedent sau care urmează

Exemplu: Whose are these keys? – Ale cui chei sunt cele de aici?

These are mine. – Acestea de aici sunt ale mele.

b) la singular cu sensul „acesta/ăsta” pentru o exprimare neutră.

Exemplu: This is Peter. – Acesta este Peter.

Notă: La formele de singular referitoare la persoanele amintite înainte trebuie folosit cuvântul de sprijin „one”.

Exemplu: This girl is smaller than **that one**. – Această fetiță este mai mică decât aceea.

- ▶ **adverbial** (as, so) mai ales în engleza americană; în engleza britanică este folosit familiar.

Exemplu: I can't climb **that** (so) high. – Nu pot să mă cațăr așa sus.

Folosire

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put „this”/„that” and „these”/„those” in front of the nouns.
Completați cu „this”/„that” și „these”/„those” în fața substantivelor.

1. ... pen – ... pen over there
2. ... books – ... books over there
3. ... cake – ... cakes over there
4. ... pictures – ... pictures over there
5. ... student – ... student over there
6. ... car – ... car over there
7. ... boy – ... boy over there
8. ... bike – ... bike over there
9. ... raincoat – ... raincoat over there
10. ... shirt – ... shirts over there
11. ... suitcase – ... suitcase over there
12. ... umbrella – ... umbrella over there
13. ... sign – ... signs over there
14. ... lady – ... lady over there
15. ... house – ... house over there

II. Put in the correct demonstrative pronoun.
Completați cu pronumele demonstrativ corect.

1. ... were the days.
2. ... building over there is Charing Cross Station.
3. ... tins are empty, but ... tins over there are full.
4. Look! Can you see the bridge in the distance? ... is Westminster Bridge and ... bridge right in front of us is Tower Bridge.
5. ... week I haven't been able to write a single letter, but ... week with Patrick was here I finished ten letters.
6. Is ... your handbag here? – No, ... handbag over there is mine.
7. ... painting here is much nicer than ... other one.
8. I don't like ... sort of material.
9. Last year we were in Italy in our holidays ... were very enjoyable days.
10. „I've missed you so much.” ... were his first words when he came home.

III. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții :

1. Casa noastră este mult mai mică decât cea a vecinului.

2. Geamantanele acelea de acolo sunt ale dumneavoastră ?
3. Cei de aici sunt prietenii mei, Pit și Herbert.
4. Care dintre fete este Sue? – Aceasta de aici.
5. Găsesc că aceste scaune sunt mai confortabile ca cele de acolo.
6. Care costum crezi că este mai drăguț ? Acesta sau acela ?
7. Eu nu pot să merg atât de departe.
8. Nu este celebrul cântăreț cel de acolo?
9. Tu poți s-o apuci pe drumul acesta sau pe cel de acolo.
10. Pe această doamnă de dincolo n-am mai văzut-o niciodată.

The Relative Pronoun

Pronumele relativ

Pronumele relative introduc propoziții secundare (**propoziții relative**). După modul în care acestea se referă la un substantiv sau pronume menționat în cursul comunicării lingvistice, denumit antecedentul relativului, pronumele relative se subîmpart în trei grupe.

- ▶ a) Pronume relative care se referă la un *antecedent* și care introduc o *propoziție relativă necesară*.
- ▶ b) Pronume relative care se referă la un *antecedent* și care introduc o *propoziție relativă nenesară*.
- ▶ Pronume relative care se referă la o *propoziție* anterioară sau care urmează.
- ▶ Pronume relative care pot să apară fără *antecedent* sau *propoziție relativă*.

Relative Pronouns in the Defining Relative Clause

Pronume relative în propoziția relativă necesară

Propozițiile relative necesare dau informații care sunt indispensabile pentru înțelegerea propoziției principale. În limba engleză ele nu se despart prin virgulă.

Exemplu: This is the boy who(m) I saw yesterday. – Acesta este băiatul pe care l-am văzut ieri.

Forme

Parte de propoziție	Pentru persoane	Pentru lucruri
Subiect	who/that	that /which
Indicație asupra posesiei	whose	whose/of which
Complement	who(m)/that	that/which

Exemplu: Persoană/subiect:

This is the man **who (that)** works as a mechanic. – Acesta este bărbatul care lucrează ca mecanic.

Persoană/ indicând posesia:

This is the man **whose** car was stolen. – Acesta este bărbatul a cărui mașină a fost furată.

Persoană/complement:

This is the man **who(m) (that)** I mean. – Acesta este bărbatul la care mă refer.

Lucru/subiect:

This is the book **which (that)** was published in 1996. – Aceasta este cartea care a fost publicată în 1996.

Lucru/indicând posesia:

This is the factory **whose** owner (the owner **of which**) died. – Aceasta este fabrica al cărei proprietar a murit.

Lucru/complement:

This is the book **which (that)** I like best. – Aceasta este cartea care îmi place cel mai mult.

Omiterea pronumelui relativ

În propozițiile relative necesare pronumele relative pot fi omise atunci când ele sunt *complemente*, adică atunci când în propoziția relativă există un subiect (substantiv/pronume).

Exemplu: This is the girl (whom) I remember well. – Aceasta este fata de care îmi aduc bine aminte. (I – eu – subiectul propoziției relative)

Pronume relativ cu prepoziție

În propozițiile relative necesare prepozițiile stau de obicei *după* verb.

Exemplu: The boy who you were talking **to** is my brother. – Băiatul cu care vorbeai este fratele meu.

În *stilul formal* prepoziția stă *înaintea* pronumelui relativ. „Who” și „that” nu au voie să stea după o prepoziție.

Exemplu: Here are the results **of** which Mr Cooper is very proud. (Here are the results that Mr Cooper is very proud **of**.) – Iată rezultatele de care dl Cooper este foarte mândru.

Relative Pronouns in the Non – Defining Relative Clause**Pronume relative în propoziția relativă nenecesară**

Propozițiile relative nenecesare aduc informații suplimentare, de care nu este neapărat nevoie pentru a înțelege propoziția principală. Ele sunt despărțite prin virgulă. Pronumele relative nu pot să lipsească.

Exemplu: The boys, who are quite young, can already read and write.

Băieții, care sunt încă destul de mici, pot de ja să citească și să scrie.

Parte de propoziție	Pentru persoane	Pentru lucruri
Subiect	who	which
Indicație asupra posesiei	whose	whose/of which
Complement	whom	which

Forme

Exemplu: Persoană/subiect:

Mr Baker, **who** lives in London, hates the provinces. – Mr Baker, care locuiește la Londra, detestă provincia.

Persoană/indicând posesia:

Mr Baker, **whose** father is a millionaire, lives in London. – Mr Baker, al cărui tată este milionar, locuiește la Londra.

Persoană/complement:

Mr Baker, **whom** I met the other day, told me the story. – Mr Baker, pe care l-am întâlnit de curând, mi-a istorisit povestea.

Lucru/subiect:

The shop, **which** sells the books, is closed today. – Magazinul, care vinde cărțile, este astăzi închis.

Lucru/indicând posesia:

My favourite shop, **whose** windows (the windows of which) are painted red, is closed today. – Magazinul meu preferat, ale cărui ferestre sunt vopsite în roșu, este astăzi închis.

Lucru/complement:

Mr Green's shop, **which** I like best, is closed today. – Magazinul dlui Green, care îmi place mie cel mai mult, este închis astăzi.

Elemente specifice

Pronume relativ cu prepoziție

În propozițiile relative necesare prepozițiile stau de obicei *în fața* pronumei relative.

Exemplu: The country, about which she knew so little, was a great experience for her. – Țara, despre care ea știa atât de puțin, a însemnat o mare experiență pentru ea.

Relative Pronouns Referring to a Sentence**Pronume relative care se referă la o propoziție**

- „Which” (ceea ce) se poate referi la o propoziție *precedentă*.

Exemplu: He said he had seen her, **which** I can't believe. – El a spus că a văzut-o, ceea ce eu nu pot să cred.

- „What” (ceea ce) poate să se refere la o propoziție *care urmează*.

Exemplu: He is a nice person and, **what** is even more important, you can trust him. – El este un om drăguț și, ceea ce este mai important, pe el te poți baza.

În ambele cazuri propoziția relativă se desparte prin virgulă/e.

Relative Pronouns without a Referent**Pronume relative fără cuvânt/propoziție de relație**

Pronumele relative de generalizare „whatever” (orice/tot ce), „whoever” (oricine/oricare) și „whichever” (oricare, ce) nu au un cuvânt sau o propoziție relativă. Ele corespund unei combinații de pronume demonstrative (de ex. that/those) sau unui numeral nehotărât (de ex. anyone) + pronume relativ.

Exemplu: Choose whoever you like. (Choose anybody who you like.) – Alege pe cine dorești.

Exercises**Exerciții**

- I. Put in „who(m)” or „which”.

Completați cu „who(m)” sau „which”.

- Our secretary, ... might have been able to help you, is on holiday.
- We spent our last holidays in Amalfi, ... is really an interesting town.
- There's somebody ... wants you on the phone.
- The book ... is lying on the table is mine.
- The man ... wrote this letter phoned half an hour ago.
- The letter, ... I posted 2 days ago, hasn't arrived yet.
- The student ... you want has just left.
- The sweets ... I bought yesterday are very good.
- The record ... you lent me 2 weeks ago is very interesting.
- The postcard ... we received yesterday came from Spain.
- The garden ... is behind the bungalow has a swimming-pool.
- The coat ... you are wearing is marvellous.
- The ring ... I got for Christmas has three rubies.
- The bush ... stands in front of the house has wonderful flowers.
- The French course ... I attending was very interesting.
- The boy ... lives next door is very clever.
- Can you remember the person ... gave it to you?
- The noise ... you can hear comes from upstairs.
- The restaurant ... I went to yesterday is very expensive.
- Students ... work hard will always be successful.

- II. Put in the correct relative pronoun.

Completați cu pronumele relativ corect.

- The boy ... mother had had the accident also had to go to hospital.
- The building ... belongs to my grandfather is very old.
- Susan, ... usually talks a lot, is not coming to the party.
- Harrod's, ... is a famous department store in London, sells nearly everything.
- The pop star, ... she had once seen on stage, was staying in the hotel opposite.
- Everybody was fond of the presents ... she had bought in Paris.
- Brighton, ... is a famous English seaside resort, has a lot of nice shops.
- The artist ... painted this picture is very famous.
- The house ... roof was damaged by the storm is very old.

10. Sam is the person ... my father is so angry about.
11. The lady ... car was stolen went to the police at once.
12. This is the boy ... has stolen my handbag.
13. Carol, ... father is a rich man, lives in an expensive apartment.
14. The man ... wrote „War and Peace” is Tolstoi.
15. The Tower, ... used to be a prison, is now a museum.
16. He has failed the exam, ... is a pity.
17. Simon was the only one ... remembered the correct date.
18. My brother didn't helped me, ... annoyed me a lot.
19. Covent Garden, ... used to be the old London fruit market, is a tourist attraction now.
20. Shakespeare, ... father was a common man, became the famous English dramatist.

III. Put in the correct relative pronoun, but only where necessary.

Folosii pronumele relativ corect, dar numai unde este necesar.

1. Is there a place ... does teas at that time of the day?
2. There are a lot of things ... she has to arrange.
3. There is one problem ... must be discussed.
4. Where are the papers ... I put on the table?
5. The house ... they are going to buy has five bedrooms.
6. The bill ... we got today must be paid within 8 days.
7. Is this the book ... you wanted to read?
8. This is not the hotel-room ... we've booked.
9. The pretty girl ... you are speaking to is my girl-friend.
10. Grammar, ... most students dislike, is very important.
11. Smoking, ... is a bad habit, is dangerous to your health.
12. Eton, ... has a famous college, is a very nice little town.
13. My uncle, ... is on holiday in Australia, has just written me a postcard.
14. The family next door, ... name I can't remember, are going to move.
15. Chess, ... is a very old game, is hard to learn.
16. My son, ... studies mathematics, is 27 years old.
17. Where are the chairs ... you want to sell?
18. She doesn't like champagne, ... is rather a pity.
19. The letter to the editor ... was published yesterday expresses exactly my opinion.
20. The train to Cambridge ... you wanted to take is late.

Final Test: The Pronoun

Test final: pronumele

Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. El lasă mereu ușa deschisă în urma sa.
2. Marele foc din Londra, care a izbucnit în 1666 într-o brutărie din Pudding Lane, a distrus mari părți din Londra.
3. „Museum of London”, care arată istoria orașului, este închis luna.
4. Pe al cui palton îl porți ? Acesta nu este al meu?
5. Nu este aceasta geanta mea? – Nu, cea de colo este a ta.
6. El s-a tăiat la deget ieri.
7. Acei trandafiri de dincolo sunt cu adevărat frumoși. Crezi tu că mătușa ta mi-ar da câțiva?
8. Cui i-ai împrumutat bicicleta ta cea nouă?
9. Puteți să-mi notați vă rog numărul dvs. de telefon ?
10. Cui îi scrii tu tocmai acum?
11. Nu îmi amintesc să o fi văzut pe sora ta vreodată.
12. Prietena mea, a cărei mamă este bucătăreasă, nu știe să gătească de loc.
13. Cine locuiește oare în casa aceea mare de vizavi?
14. Bărbatul, pe care tocmai îl caută poliția, a evadat din acea închisoare.
15. El are trei fete, care lucrează toate la aceeași firmă.
16. El nu i-a dat ei cartea încă.
17. Ei vorbeau unul cu altul ca niște prieteni buni, cu toate că nu se cunoșteau de loc.
18. Pot să mă așez, sau locul acesta este ocupat?
19. Ce palton să-mi iau cu mine, pe cel gros albastru sau pe cel subțire negru?
20. Am nevoie de carte drept cadou pentru el, nu pentru mine personal.
21. Paharul din care bei este încă murdar.
22. Pachetul pe care mi l-a trimis era deteriorat.
23. Nu îmi plac acești oameni.
24. Peter și-a oferit imediat ajutorul, ceea ce a fost foarte surprinzător.
25. Ce culoare are părul tău ?
26. El locuiește cu sora lui în acea casuță de vizavi.
27. Simon s-a dus singur să cumpere cadouri de Crăciun.
28. El a venit cu pălăria în mână.
29. Nu l-am cunoscut încă personal.
30. La cine te gândești în acest moment?

The Preposition

Prepoziția

Function and Position

Funcția și poziția

Prepozițiile sunt cuvinte de relație, care indică relația dintre două obiecte, două cuvinte sau părți de propoziții.

Exemplu: „I – London” nu are nici un sens. Chiar dacă apare un verb, sensul tot nu este complet: „I – go – London”.

Doar prepoziția indică exact relația între „I” și „London”: „I go to London”.

Prepozițiile se subîmpart după formă în două grupe:

- **Prepoziții simple**, ca de ex.:
at, by, in etc.
- **Prepoziții compuse**, ca de ex.:
into, instead of, next to etc.

În funcție de folosirea lor, prepozițiile se subîmpart în cinci grupe principale:

- Spațiu (de ex. on, in front of).
- Timp (de ex. during, before)
- Mod, mijloace (de ex. with, by means of)
- Scop, intenție (de ex. for, in order to)
- Cauză, motiv (de ex. due to, because of).

Sensurile inițiale ale prepozițiilor s-au estompat sau pot fi folosite figurat.

Exemplu: I am in the house. (spațiu)

I am in the computer business. (sens estompat)

I am in tears. (sens figurat)

Poziția prepozițiilor

- Prepozițiile stau, așa după cum ne arată și numele (lat. *praepositio* – poziție anterioară), de obicei în fața complementului (C).

Exemplu: She looked at **him**.

(C)

She is interested in **music**.

(C)

- Prepozițiile stau la sfârșitul propoziției în:

a) întrebări adresate complementului

Exemplu: What is he interested in? (v. și cap. „The Interrogative Pronoun – Pronumele interogativ”)

b) propoziții relative necesare

Exemplu: This is the person (who) I was introduced to. (V. și capitoul „The Relative Pronoun – Pronumele relativ”.)

c) construcții infinitivale

Exemplu: He had no pen to write with.

Complementul prepozițional

Complementul aflat după prepoziție poate fi de ex. un substantiv sau un pronume. Deoarece trebuie să aibă caracter de substantiv, se ia în considerare doar forma de gerunziu a verbului (formă -ing) pe post de complement. (V. cap. „Gerunziu”.)

Exemplu: He is interested in **music**.

Complement (substantiv)

He is interested in **it**.

Complement (pronume)

He is interested in **reading**.

Complement (gerunziu)

Notă: Și după prepoziția „to” urmează un gerunziu, nu un infinitiv!

Exemplu: He is looking forward to **meeting** Sam.

The Most Common Prepositions and their Uses

Cele mai uzuale prepoziții și folosirea lor

Unele prepoziții seamănă ca sens și de aceea sunt adesea confundate. În cele ce urmează, vor fi explicate cele mai uzuale prepoziții, care stau în fața substantivelor și care sunt în situația de a fi confundate.

„At”, „in”, „on” cu sens spațial

At – cu referire la o zonă restrânsă a spațiului sau un punct fix

Exemple:	at the table	– la masă
	at the party	– la petrecere
	at the station	– la gară
	at home	– acasă
	at the beginning	– la început

Atenție:

► at + oraș mic, sat (at Epsom)	– în ...
► at + anume loc de muncă (at Sainsbury's)	– în Epsom)
► at + adresa exactă (at 2 Station Road)	– la...
► at + church, school etc.	– la Sainsbury)
► at + Genitiv (at the Millers')	– pe ...
► at court	– pe strada Gării nr.2)
<i>dar:</i> in court	– la biserică, la școală
	– în casa lui....
	– în casa familiei Miller)
	– la tribunal
	– la judecată

In – cu referire la un spațiu mai larg

Exemple:	in the kitchen	– în bucătărie
	in the picture	– în poză
	in the world	– în lume
	in the sky	– pe cer

Atenție:

► in + oraș mare (in Paris)	– în ...
	– în Paris)

- in + tip de loc de muncă sau locuință
(in an office
(in a flat
- in + church, school etc.
- in the street
dar: on the road
- in court
dar: at court

- în ...
- într-un birou)
- într-un apartament)
- în biserică, în clădirea școlii
- pe stradă (în oraș)
- pe șosea
- la tribunal
- la judecată

On – pe o suprafață

Exemple:

on the table
on the wall
on the 2nd floor
on the way
on the left (side)

Atenție:

- on the road
dar: in the street
- on the sea/lake
dar: at sea

- pe masă
- pe perete
- la al 2-lea etaj
- pe drum
- pe partea stângă

- pe șosea
- pe stradă (în oraș)
- pe mare/lac
- pe mare în larg

„At”, „in”, „on” cu sens temporal

At – la un moment precis

Exemplu:

at 10 o'clock
at sunrise/sunset
at midnight
at the moment
at Christmas

Atenție:

- on + anumite zile
(on Easter Monday
- at the beginning
dar: in the beginning
- at night
- at times
- at that time
- at what time

- la ora 10
- la răsăritul/apusul soarelui
- la miezul nopții
- la momentul respectiv
- la Crăciun

- în data de....
- în luna Paștelui)
- la început (moment)
- la începutul (unei perioade)
- noaptea
- ocazional
- în acea vreme
- la ce oră

- at the same time
dar: in the same time

- în același timp (moment)
– în același timp (perioadă)

In – într-o perioadă de timp

Exemplu: in the afternoon
in winter
in the 19th century
in 1987
in a short time

- după-amiaza
– iarna
– în secolul 19
– în 1987
– în scurt timp

Atenție:

- in the beginning
dar: at the beginning
► in the end

- la început (perioadă)
– la început (moment)
– la sfârșit, în cele din urmă (timp)
– la sfârșit (capăt)
– la sfârșitul săptămânii (moment)

dar: at the end
at the end of the week

- in the same time
dar: at the same time
► in these (those) days
► in the night
dar: at night
► in time
dar: on time

- în același timp (perioadă)
– în același timp (moment)
– în acele zile (atunci)
– în timpul nopții
– noaptea
– la timp
– punctual

On – în anumite zile

Exemplu: on Monday
on Mondays
on the 2nd of April
on Christmas Eve
on my birthday

- în ziua de luni
– luna
– pe 2 aprilie
– în seara de Crăciun
– la ziua mea de naștere

Atenție:

- on + perioada din zi
(on the morning of April 2nd)
► in + perioada din zi
(in the morning)
► on end
► on this occasion
► on time
dar: in time

- în ...
– în dimineața zilei de 2.04)
– dimineața, seara etc.
– dimineața)
– neîntrerupt
– cu această ocazie
– punctual
– la timp

„Above”, „over”, „across”, „via” – peste**Above – deasupra**

(fără atingere cu suprafața de bază)

Exemplu: The plane is above the clouds. – Avionul este deasupra norilor.

Over – chiar deasupra

Exemplu: The lamp hangs over the table. – Lampa atârnă deasupra mesei.

Over – deasupra....peste

Exemplu: He jumps over the wall. – El sare peste zid

Atenție:

- over there – acolo/vizavi
► all over the world – în toată lumea

Across – peste

Exemplu: There is a bridge across the river. – Este un pod peste râu.

Via – via/prin

Exemplu: He drove to Vienna via Salzburg. – El a mers la Viena via/prin Salzburg.

„Under”, „below” – sub**Under – vertical sau chiar sub**

Exemplu: The cat is under the table. – Pisica este sub masă.

Below – sub

(fără atingere cu suprafața)

Exemplu: The plane is below the clouds. – Avionul este sub nori.

„Between”, „among” – între**Between – între doi**

Exemplu: I am standing between Pam and Sue. – Eu stau între Pam și Sue.

Among – între mulți, printre

Exemplu: I am standing among many people. – Eu stau printre mulți oameni.
dar: „Between” stă în locul lui „among” când trebuie exprimată relația cu fiecare din grup.

Exemplu: She divided the money between her three sisters. – Ea a împărțit banii între cele trei surori ale ei.

„To”, „towards” – spre**To – la**

(punct terminus)

Exemplu: I went to the building. – M-am dus la clădire.

Towards – la, cu direcția

(dacă țelul va fi atins, rămâne o problemă nelămurită)

Exemplu: I went towards the building. – M-am îndreptat spre clădire.

„To”, „as far as” – până la**To – până la**

(punct terminus)

Exemplu: I walked to the house. – Eu m-am dus până la casă.

As far as – până la

(țintă parțială)

Exemplu: On Monday we travelled as far as the French border, the next day we reached Paris. – Luni am călătorit până la granița franceză, a doua zi am ajuns la Paris.

„After”, „behind”, „beyond”, „past” – după**After – după, pe urmele...**

Exemplu: The police ran after the thief. – Polițiștii au alergat după hoț.

Behind – după, în spatele

Exemplu: The garden is behind the house. – Grădina este în spatele casei.

Beyond – în spatele, de după..

Exemplu: The village is beyond the hill. – Satul este după (dincolo de) deal.

Past – după, după ce treci...

Exemplu: The building is 300 metres past the church. – Clădirea este la 300 de metri după biserică (după ce treci de biserică).

„In front of”, „before” – în fața**In front of – în fața**

(spațial)

Exemplu: The tree is in front of the house. – Pomul este în fața casei.

Before – înaintea

(temporal, succesiune)

Exemplu: „A” comes before „B” in the alphabet. – „A” vine înaintea lui „B” în alfabet.

„Ago”, „before” (ambele în poziție finală) – înainte, acum...**Ago – acum...**

(privind dinspre prezent)

Exemplu: 2 years ago I spent my holidays in Spain. – Acum doi ani (privind din prezent) mi-am petrecut vacanța în Spania.

Before – acum (înainte)

(calculat dintr-un moment al trecutului)

Exemplu: 2 years before his mother had had the accident. (Past Perfect) – Cu doi ani înainte (privind de atunci) de a fi avut mama lui accidentul.

„Since”, „for” – de

Since – de/din (moment)

(de când?)

Exemplu: I haven't seen him since May. – Nu l-am văzut din luna mai.

For – de (perioadă)

(de cât timp)

Exemplu: I haven't seen him for 2 months. – Nu l-am văzut de două luni.

„By”, „with” – cu

By – cu

(mijloc de locomotie)

Exemplu: by train – cu trenul

By – cu

(mijloc)

Exemplu: by hand – cu mâna

With – cu

(unealtă)

Exemplu: with a knife – cu un cuțit

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

I. Choose the correct prepositions.

Alegeți prepozițiile corecte.

„At”, „in” or „on”?

1. Last week there was a terrible storm ... England.
2. The people had to stay ... their houses because of the rain.
3. ... school I'm always very tired.
4. My uncle lives ... New York.
5. Paul is not ... home ... the moment.
6. ... the morning I usually do the housework.
7. ... July 15th we'll have an important meeting.

8. There is a drink for you ... the fridge.

9. My birthday is ... the 11th of December.

10. I was born ... August 2nd, 1968.

11. Please, don't put your feet ... sofa.

12. I work ... a bookstore.

13. The ladies' department is ... the third floor.

14. I met him ... the bus stop.

15. ... what time will he come?

16. She lives ... a nice apartment.

17. Go straight on, the building is ... your right.

18. Do you have to work ... Saturdays?

19. She lives ... 34 River Way.

20. The plane is going to leave ... time.

„Above”, „over”, „across” or „via”?

1. The shirt costs ... £ 10.

2. The sky ... was grey.

3. The thief climbed ... the wall and tried to escape.

4. The plane was flying 200 feet ... the sea.

5. We are going to Dover ... Canterbury.

6. Mother put the blanket ... the bed.

7. The neighbour looked ... the fence at us.

8. The temperature was ... zero.

9. England lies ... the Channel.

10. We go to England ... Ostende.

11. They came to a river with no bridges ... it.

12. You can see the tower ... the trees.

13. I helped the old lady ... the street.

14. We walked ... the bridge.

15. She lives just ... the street.

„Under” or „below”?

1. When you are on the top of the hill, you can see the village down ...

2. The dog is lying ... the table.

3. It's 5 degrees ... zero.

4. She put the English Grammar ... her pillow.

5. The cottage is ... the top of the mountain.

6. The people who live ... us are always very noisy.

7. He always hide things ... the bed.

8. They were sitting ... the branches of an oak tree.

9. Some animals live in holes ... the ground.

10. The wreck lies some hundred feet ... sea level.

„Between” or „among”?

1. Our house is ... the school and the factory.
2. We tied a rope ... the two trees.
3. Peter is somewhere ... the children.
4. He is ... 20 and 25 years old.
5. He lost his wife ... the crowd.
6. I discovered him ... the people in the queue.
7. You can choose ... these books.
8. There has never been a fence ... the two houses.
9. The leader sat ... the boyscouts.
10. She divided the presents ... us.

„To” or „towards”?

1. I go ... school every morning.
2. A person came ... us, but after 10 meters he stopped.
3. He looked ... the sky.
4. Yesterday my friend flew ... Rome.
5. I wrote a letter ... my pen-friend.
6. He has a strange attitude ... foreigners.
7. The apple fell ... the ground.
8. We walked ... the castle.
9. Can you tell me the way ... the post office?
10. When I saw them they were walking ... the river, but I'm not sure where they wanted to go to.

„To” or „as far as”?

1. The last train ... London is at 12 o'clock at night.
2. I haven't been ... the cinema for 2 months.
3. We wanted to walk ... the youth hostel, but we only got ... Maidstone.
4. They finally came ... the house.
5. On the first day we drove ... Munich, on the second day we reached our hotel.
6. When are you returning ... London?
7. They wanted to walk ... the top of the mountain.
8. They only came ... the cottage.
9. He went ... the shop.
10. How do I get ... the theatre?

„After”, „behind”, „beyond” or „past”?

1. If you go ... the house you can see the sea.
2. John is hiding ... the tree.
3. The butler stood ... the chair.

4. The children are playing ... the house.
5. All the people were queuing. One person was standing ... the other.
6. You'll find his house ... the church.
7. The teacher walked in front and the students came ...
8. The dog ran ... the cat.
9. I ran ... him because he had forgotten his keys.
10. John arrived ... me.
11. Look ... you! Someone is following us.
12. I sent ... him, but he had already left.
13. The place you are looking for is ... the river.
14. The boys are ... her, because she's so pretty.
15. I left my book ...

„In front of” or „before”?

1. The car is standing ... the house.
2. Sue sits ... me at school.
3. His name should come ... mine on the list.
4. The lady ... me came ... me.
5. I can't come ... 8 o'clock.
6. There is a nice garden ... the house.
7. Finish your homework ... dinner.
8. I have never seen her ...
9. They were standing ... the hotel.
10. I don't know this record. That was ... my time.

„Ago”, or „before”?

1. He had lost his purse 2 weeks ...
2. Some days ... I met him in front of the cinema.
3. I was in England 2 months ...
4. I had been in France the week ... you arrived.
5. His father died a year ...
6. I had never seen him ...
7. My brother had visited my uncle one year ...
8. Three years ... he went to Australia.
9. The year ... he had been to America.
10. A week ... I got my new car.

„Since” or „for”?

1. ... he was a young boy.
2. ... 1st of March.
3. ... my birthday.
4. ... I came to Germany.

5. ... 4 years.
6. ... last Saturday.
7. ... 2 days.
8. ... a few weeks.
9. ... Christmas day.
10. ... last week.
11. ... last weekend.
12. ... a few months.
13. ... then.
14. ... I remember.
15. ... some weeks.

„By” or „with”?

1. I went to London ... plane.
2. You cannot open this parcel ... a pair of scissors.
3. I sent the letter ... airmail.
4. I seldom go to work ... car.
5. He didn't go ... bus.
6. He made the desk ... saw and hammer.
7. The letter wasn't written ... hand.
8. He opened the letter ... a knife.
9. He came to school ... bike.
10. Can't you repair it ... those tools?

Prepositions Which are Dependent on Verbs

Prepoziții dependente de verbe

Prepozițiile depind adesea de verbe. Unele verbe pot primi diferite prepoziții, ceea ce atrage după sine o **modificare de sens**. În cele ce urmează sunt enumerate în ordine alfabetică cele mai importante verbe cu prepozițiile posibile și cu traducere.

to agree in	– a fi de acord în
~ on/upon	– a se pune de acord asupra unui lucru
~ to	– a accepta un lucru
~ with	– a fi de acord cu, a-i conveni
to apply for	– a solicita ceva

~ to	– a se adresa cuiva
to ask about	– a se interesa de un lucru
~ after	– a se interesa de starea unei persoane
~ for	– a ruga pentru ceva
to call at/on	– a face o vizită scurtă
~ for	– a cere/a revendica
~ up	– a suna pe cineva la telefon
to care about/for	– a fi interesat de
~ for	– a-i plăcea
~ for	– a avea grijă de, a se preocupa de
to change for	– a schimba cu/a schimba vehiculul
~ into	– a (se) transforma în
to charge for	– a cere, a solicita (preț)
~ with	– a însărcina cu, a învinui de
to come about	– a se întâmpla
~ across	– a da peste
~ for	– a veni pentru
to compare to	– a pune la egalitate cu
~ with	– a compara cu
to complain about/of	– a se plânge de
~ to	– a se plânge la
to condemn for	– a condamna pentru
~ to	– a condamna la
to consist of	– a consta din
to deal in	– a face comerț cu (o marfă)
~ with	– a trata despre (ex. o carte), a umbla cu (cineva), a face comerț cu (cineva), a se ocupa cu/de ...
to die by	– a muri din cauza ... (ex. foc)
~ for	– a muri pentru
~ from/of	– a muri de (ex. foame)
to distinguish between	– a face distincția între ...
~ oneself by	– a se distinge prin
~ from	– a se deosebi de
to divide among/between	– a împărți între/la doi
~ something by	– a împărți/divide prin
~ something into	– a împărți ceva (în)
to give in (to)	– a ceda
~ up	– a renunța
to hope for	– a spera la

the hope of	- a spera în
to inquire about	- a se informa asupra
~ after	- a se interesa de starea cuiva
~ of	- a se informa la cineva
to introduce into	- a introduce ceva/pe cineva (a face cunoscut) într-o problemă
~ to	- a prezenta pe cineva
to judge about/of	- a judeca asupra
~ by/from	- a judeca după
to lean against	- a se rezema de
~ on	- a se baza pe
to live by	- a trăi din
~ on	- a trăi cu (ex. pâine)
~ with	- a locui la
to look about	- a privi în jur
~ after	- a avea grijă de
~ at	- a privi la
~ down upon somebody	- a privi de sus la cineva
~ for	- a căuta
~ forward to	- a aștepta cu nerăbdare ...
~ in	- a face o scurtă vizită
~ into	- a privi în, a examina, a studia
~ like (adverb)	- a arăta ca, a semăna cu ...
~ on	- a privi
~ on/upon as	- a considera drept
~ out	- a fi atent la
~ over	- a se uita peste (a verifica)
~ through	- a citi atent
~ up	- a căuta (de ex. în enciclopedie)
to look up to somebody	- a ridica ochii la cineva
to point at	- a arăta spre
~ out	- a arăta cu degetul
~ to	- a indica spre, a semnala
to speak about	- a vorbi despre
~ of	- a pomeni/aminti
~ on	- a ține o cuvântare despre
~ to	- a vorbi (cu cineva)
~ up	- a vorbi mai tare

~ with	- a se întreține (cu cineva)
to stay away	- a sta deoparte
~ in (out)	- a rămâne în casă (sau în afara casei)
~ up	- a rămâne treaz
~ with	- a rămâne la cineva (a fi în vizită)
to take by	- a apuca de
~ for	- a lua pe cineva drept
~ off	- a dezbrăca (haine), a decola
to think about	- a reflecta la
~ of	- a se gândi la
to turn against	- a se întoarce împotriva
~ away (from)	- a se întoarce /distanța (de)
~ back	- a se întoarce
~ down	- a refuza (pe cineva)
~ inside out	- a răsuci (ex. buzunarele)
~ into	- a transforma în
~ off	- a închide ceva (ex. caloriferul)
~ on	- a deschide ceva (ex. caloriferul)
~ out	- a se dovedi (ca)
~ to	- a se adresa la
~ up	- a apărea
to wait behind	- a rămâne în urmă
~ for	- a aștepta
~ on	- a servi pe cineva
~ up	- a rămâne treaz și a aștepta
to weep for	- a plânge după (cineva)
~ over	- a plânge de ceva întâmplat
~ with/for	- a plânge de (ex. teamă)
to write about	- a scrie despre ceva
~ back	- a scrie ca răspuns (la scrisoare)
~ down	- a nota
to write in	- a scrie cu (ex. cerneală)
~ off	- a copia ceva (a privi ca pe ceva pierdut)
~ out	- a completa ceva (ex. cec)
~ to	- a scrie cuiva
~ with	- a scrie cu (ex. stilou)

Exercises

Exerciții

Put in the correct preposition.

Completați cu prepoziția corectă.

1. Please turn the radiator ... it's too warm.
2. I can't find my glasses, I've been looking ... them all day.
3. The lady inquired ... the buses to Canterbury.
4. I'm looking forward ... seeing you next month.
5. Divide 50... 10!
6. We all hope ... the best.
7. The story turned ... to be not true.
8. The policeman took the thief ... the collar.
9. I'm sorry, we are late. We had to wait ... the bus.
10. The plane took ... at 10 a.m.
11. The teacher complained ... the student's bad marks.
12. The soldiers died ... hunger.
13. May I introduce you ... my father.
14. When I was in England I stayed ... a host family.
15. The old man leaned ... his walking stick.
16. Because I was ill, I had to stay ... last week.
17. The answers have to be written ...
18. When she heard the news, she wept ... joy.
19. The man next door lives ... selling cars.
20. You can look ... the unknown words in the appendix.
21. Don't write ... pencil, but ... ink!
22. The children wrote postcards ... their parents.
23. The students applied ... a holiday job.
24. My mother came ... the letter in my desk.
25. The book deals ... social problems.
26. The magician change the parrot ... a rabbit.
27. The prisoner was condemned ... murder.
28. How much did he charge ... the spare parts?
29. He is similar to his father. He looks ... his father.
30. Could you please look ... my cat while I'm on holiday?
31. The actress looked ... the mirror.
32. The doctor told me to give ... smoking.
33. On Saturday the children stayed ... till 10 o'clock.
34. He is looked ... an expert.
35. The speaker pointed ... that the work had to be continued.
36. They provided two servants to wait ... us.
37. Please write to me ... your next job.

Final Test: The Preposition

Test final: prepoziția

Put in the correct prepositions.

Folosiți prepozițiile corespunzătoare.

1. We arrived ... the station ... midnight.
2. I don't care ... sport.
3. You must learn to distinguish ... good and bad.
4. The students complained ... the homework.
5. I haven't been in town ... 3 weeks.
6. Simon is sitting ... the other children.
7. We are going ... Paris ... Strasbourg.
8. 3 weeks ... we talked about this problem.
9. I didn't come ... train, I came ... bus.
10. My father works ... Harrods.
11. He hasn't written ... me ... last month.
12. My mother is preparing dinner ... the kitchen.
13. The accident happened ... the road to Sevenoaks.
14. 2 years ... I had already been ... Germany.
15. The robber was condemned ... 5 years imprisonment.
16. Can you distinguish a horse ... a donkey?
17. He wanted to pick up his record. He came ... his record.
18. Our firm has never dealt ... Simsons Ltd.
19. The man was charged ... blackmailing.
20. The text consists ... five chapters.
21. The meal didn't agree ... me.
22. Don't put your bike in front of the house, put it ... the house.
23. Why are you always so obstinate? You never give ...!
24. Be careful! Look ...!
25. Could you please write ... a cheque?

II. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Locuim din 1995 pe strada Bisericii nr.25.
2. El a insistat să deschidă safe-ul.
3. Copiii sub 16 ani nu au voie să intre într-un local.
4. Îl aștept deja de o oră pe Tom.
5. El a murit acum 2 zile de infarct.
6. Am auzit atât de multe despre ea, încât mă bucur în așteptarea întâlnirii cu ea.
7. Fii te rog punctual mâine!

8. Noi avem o mică grădină în spatele casei.
9. El și-a pierdut ieri portofelul în metrou.
10. Acum o săptămână ea a solicitat postul de secretară la firma Cup Ltd.
11. În partea dreaptă poți vedea în poză casa noastră.
12. Eu sunt seara de obicei la ora 18 acasă.
13. Tu poți să mă găsești la birou între orele 13 și 14.
14. El a scris o scrisoare mătușii sale și a trimis-o cu poșta aeriană.
15. El a fost găsit pe o stâncă sub vârful muntelui.
16. Mama mea lucrează deja de 3 ani la Supermarket.
17. El a trăit 5 ani de zile printre indieni.
18. El a înțeles amenințarea printre rânduri.
19. Printre solicitanți erau trei candidați potriviți.
20. Noi am ajuns la timp la masa de seară la hotel.
21. Când el a trecut podul, a văzut un avion deasupra sa.
22. În seara zilei de 13 octombrie s-a petrecut accidentul.
23. Lui îi plăcea să trăiască la indienii din pădurea virgină.
24. Mai uită-te o dată peste compunerea ta. Pe rândul al doilea este o greșală.
25. Ei vorbesc deja de o jumătate de oră despre problemele sale.

The Conjunction

Conjunția

Cuvintele care leagă părți de propoziție sau propoziții între ele se numesc conjuncții. Deosebim:

- **conjuncții coordonatoare (co-ordinating conjunctions)**, care leagă părți de propoziție de același fel, propoziție principală (PP) cu propoziție principală sau propoziție secundară (PS) cu propoziție secundară.

Exemplu: He was expecting a prize, but he was disappointed.

El aștepta un premiu, dar a fost dezamăgit.

PP conjuncție PP
 coordonatoare

Dintre ele fac parte: also, and, besides, but, either ... or, for, however, neither ... nor, nevertheless, nor, or, so, still, therefore, thus, too, yet etc.

- **conjuncții subordonatoare (subordinating conjunctions)**, care într-o frază (propoziție principală și propoziție secundară) introduc propoziția secundară.

Exemplu: If it rains, I'll stay in.

PS
Dacă plouă, voi rămâne acasă.
conjuncție PP
subordonatoare

Dintre ele fac parte: after, as, because, before, if, now, since, so that, that, unless, until, when, where, whereas, while etc.

În cele ce urmează sunt tratate conjuncțiile, care se confundă ușor cu alte conjuncții sau cu alte părți de vorbire (de ex. prepoziții).

Folosire

„if” sau „when”?

If- dacă/în caz că

introduce o *propoziție condițională* – Conditional Clause (v. și cap. „Conditional Clauses”, p. 129.)

Exemplu: If it rains, we can't have our picnic. – Dacă (în caz că) plouă, nu putem să facem picnic.

When – dacă, de îndată ce

introduce o *propoziție temporală* (Temporal Clause).

Exemplu: When he comes, we can leave. Când (de îndată ce) vine, putem pleca.

„during”, „while” sau „whereas”?

During – în timp ce

stă ca prepoziție în fața unui *substantiv* (resp. *articol/pronume + substantiv*)

Exemplu: During the holidays he wrote many letters. – În timpul vacanței el a scris multe scrisori.

While – în timpul

folosit ca o conjuncție introduce o *propoziție secundară circumstanțială de timp* (Temporal Clause)

Exemplu: While he was on holiday he wrote many letters. – În timp ce era în vacanță, a scris multe scrisori.

Whereas – în timp ce, pe când

introduce în calitate de conjuncție o *propoziție secundară adversativă* (Adversative Clause)

Exemplu: He went on holiday, whereas I stayed at home. – El a plecat în concediu, în timp ce eu am rămas acasă.

„because”, „since”, „as” sau „for”?

Because – deoarece, fiindcă

este folosit precedat de o *propoziție principală*.

Exemplu: He was late because he had missed the bus. – El a întârziat fiindcă/deoarece a pierdut autobuzul.

Notă: because of – datorită (prepoziție înaintea substantivului)

Exemplu: Because of his illness, he couldn't come. – Din cauza bolii nu a putut veni.

Since – deoarece

este folosit, când urmează o *propoziție principală* și motivul celor petrecute este *cunoscut* ascultătorului.

Exemplu: Since he had missed the bus, he was late. – Deoarece a pierdut autobuzul, a întârziat.

As – fiindcă, pentru că

este folosit, când urmează o *propoziție principală* și motivul celor întâmplate este *amintit* numai în *treacăt*.

Exemplu: As he had missed the bus, he was late. – Fiindcă a pierdut autobuzul, a întârziat.

For – deoarece, întrucât, pentru că, căci

introduce o *propoziție principală*.

Exemplu: He was late, for he had missed the bus. – El a întârziat, pentru că a pierdut autobuzul.

„too”, „also”, „as well”, „so”, „neither” sau „nor”, „not either”?

Too – și/de asemenea

stă adesea la *sfârșitul propoziției* și se desparte prin virgulă.

Exemplu: My friends go to school, too.

sau: My friends, too, go to school. – Și prietenii mei merg la școală.

Also – de asemenea

stă de regulă *după cuvântul* pe care vrea să-l scoată în evidență.

Exemplu: My friends also go to school. – Prietenii mei merg și ei la școală.

As well – și

stă la *sfârșitul propoziției*.

Exemplu: My friends go to school as well. – Prietenii mei merg la școală și ei.

So – și/de asemenea

Cu „so” se formează *propoziții scurte*. Un verb auxiliar existent în propoziția precedentă este reluat.

Dacă în propoziția precedentă nu există un verb auxiliar, se folosește forma corespunzătoare a lui „to do”. Construcția este: „so” + *vb. auxiliar + persoană*.

Ordinea verb auxiliar (predicat) – persoană (subiect) nu corespunde poziției normale în propoziție subiect – predikat. Această rearanjare se numește „*Inversion*”.

Exemplu: Peter **can** swim. – Peter știe să înoate.

So **can I**. – Și eu.

Peter is at home. – Peter este acasă.

So **is** his father. – Și tatăl lui.

Peter **likes** ice-cream. – Lui Peter îi place înghețata.

So **do I**. – Și mie.

Peter went out. – Peter a ieșit în oraș.

So **did I**. – Și eu.

Neither/nor – nici...nici

Cu „neither” sau „nor” se formează *propoziții scurte*. Verbul auxiliar existent în propoziția precedentă este reluat. Construcția este: „*neither/nor*” + *verb auxiliar + persoană*. (apare o *inversiune*).

Exemplu: I **cannot** swim. – Nu știu să înot.

Neither/Nor **can** Peter. – Nici Peter.

I **will** not come. – Eu nu voi veni.

Neither/Nor **will** Peter. – Nici Peter.

I **don't** like hamburgers. – Mie nu îmi plac hamburgerii.

Neither/Nor **does** Peter. – Nici lui Peter.

Not... either- nici/ la fel

se folosește cu topică normală. Nu se cere deci inversiune.

Exemplu: Paul does not go home either. – Nici Paul nu se duce acasă.

Notă: La „not ... either” spre deosebire de „neither/nor” trebuie folosit verbul predicativ (ex. go).

„like”, „as” sau „how”?**Like – ca**

se folosește cu o *comparație relevantă*

Exemplu: a woman like her – o femeie ca ea

It's something like a machine. – Este ceva ca o mașină.

He behaves like an idiot. – Se poartă ca un idiot.

Like – ca

se folosește la comparații numai când urmează un *substantiv/pronume*.

Exemplu: Drink like a king! – Bea ca un rege!

As – ca

stă după *adjective, adverbe* și „*the same*”.

Exemplu: sweet as sugar – dulce ca zahărul

the same as before – la fel ca și înainte

As – cum

stă în *propoziția comparativă* în fața substantivului sau a pronumelui, dacă urmează un verb.

Exemplu: Lay the table as they **do** in good restaurants. – Pune masa, așa cum se face în restaurantele bune.

As – ca

se folosește pentru exprimarea *comparativului de egalitate*.

Exemplu: He works as a teacher. – El lucrează ca profesor (el este profesor).

dar: He speaks like my teacher. – El vorbește ca profesorul meu (dar el nu este profesorul).

As ...as – așa ...cum

între „as...as” stă un *adverb* sau un *adjectiv*.

Exemplu: as soon as possible – cât de curând posibil

as tall as Mary – tot atât de înaltă ca Mary

How – cum, în ce mod, în ce măsură

se folosește în calitate de *cuvânt interogativ*.

Exemplu: How did you manage? – Cum ai reușit?

How old is Mary? – Câți ani are Mary?

Notă: „Cum” se traduce în unele întrebări cu „what”!

Exemplu: Cum se numește asta?

– What do you call this?

Cum te cheamă?

– What is your name?

Cât este ceasul?

– What is the time?

Cum ar fi cu...?

– What about...?

Cum arată mașina ta?

– What does your car look like?

Test

Final Test: The Conjunction**Test final: conjuncția****I. Put in „if” or „when”.**

Completați cu „if” sau „when”.

1. The dog always runs to the door ... the bell rings.
2. I'll go on holiday next summer ... I have time.
3. ... their parents are out, the children get up to all sorts of nonsense.
4. The driver stopped immediately ... he saw the child.
5. ... I pass my exam, my father will buy me a car.
6. You'd know the story ... you'd read today's paper.
7. What would you do ... you found £ 1000?
8. Mother always turns on the radio ... she does the washing-up.
9. You'll miss the train ... you don't hurry.
10. You can see the Tower ... you are standing on the Monument.

II. Put in „during”, „while” or „whereas”.

Completați cu „during”, „while” sau „whereas”.

1. ... our stay in England the weather was fine.
2. ... dinner we talked about our plans for the next day.
3. ... we were having dinner we watched TV.
4. ... we were in Italy we visited some friends.
5. ... the last year we had a lot of work.
6. My brother spent his holiday in Spain ... I went to Italy.
7. ... we were on the beach we played some games.

8. I had to work overtime, ... my colleagues were on holiday.

9. ... the last week we wrote three class tests.

10. ... she was preparing dinner, the telephone rang.

11. ... the lesson Peter didn't listen.

12. ... the teacher was explaining the text, some of the students were not listening.

13. There may be occasional showers ... the day.

14. ... the examination I didn't feel nervous.

15. Several important letters came ... we were in England.

11. Put in „because”, „since”, „as” or „for”.

Completați cu „because”, „since”, „as” sau „for”.

1. He couldn't come to the party, ... he was ill.

2. ... his mother was in hospital, he had to look after himself.

3. ... nobody had told him, he didn't know.

4. He got some extra homework ... he had forgotten his exercise book.

5. ... Sally is not a good student, she couldn't take part in the competition.

6. ... my little brother is ill, I have to stay at home.

7. ... he had lost his purse, I lent him some money.

8. He can't buy the book, ... he hasn't got any pocket money left.

9. Simon got the job ... he has very good reports.

10. I'm very hungry, ... I haven't had my dinner yet.

11. Sam lost his job ... he hadn't done his work properly.

12. ... she doesn't understand German, we had to translate everything.

13. ... I didn't sleep very well last night. I'm very tired today.

14. ... we had missed the last train, we had to take a taxi.

15. ... English pubs close very early, we came home quite early.

16. I'm sorry, I can't come, ... I have to see the doctor.

17. We didn't go to the seaside, ... it was raining.

18. ... Sheila is very lazy, she'll never be successful.

19. On Sunday we stayed in all day ... the weather was terrible.

20. Harry was elected chairman ... he is such a good speaker.

IV. Form short sentences with the persons in brackets.

Formați propoziții scurte cu persoanele din paranteză.

1. My father can speak Italian. (I)

2. Sally is a very good student. (her brother)

3. My mother cooks well. (I)

4. The Millers will come to the meeting. (the Meyers)

5. Edith doesn't go out very often. (her sisters)

6. Judith can't stand stupid persons. (I)

7. He likes science-fiction stories. (I)

8. My sister hasn't got a driving-licence. (my brother)
9. Simon hadn't got his homework. (I)
10. I don't watch TV very often. (he)
11. Billy must go home now. (Peter)
12. I don't like him. (I)
13. Petra can speak English. (Susanne)
14. I can write English letters. (my friends)
15. Michael enjoys sailing. (Carmen)

V. Put in „like”, „as” or „how”.

Completați cu „like”, „as” sau „how”.

1. Mary dances ... a queen.
2. ... did you find the correct answer?
3. Sally is a member of the school choir, but she sings ... a professional singer.
4. Sam sometimes behaves ... a baby.
5. ... did the thief get into the house?
6. My car is ... fast ... yours.
7. My sister works ... a secretary at Simon and Co.
8. Mr Harris speaks German ... a German but he's English.
9. Men ... Einstein are rare.
10. He did it ... his uncle had done it.
11. ... do you do?
12. The old warehouses are used ... flats now.
13. She looks ... her sister.
14. When he came back from the playing-ground, he was so dirty, he looked ... a chimney sweeper.
15. You should try to see yourself ... others see you.
16. The exercise isn't ... easy ... you think.
17. The little child followed me ... a dog.
18. My father is a clerk, but he can repair things ... a carpenter.
19. Now we have the same problem ... we had before.
20. Little Billy sometimes speaks ... an adult.

Indefinite Quantifiers

Numerale nehotărâte

Numeralele nehotărâte ca „much”, „many”, „some”, „any” etc. mai sunt numite și **pronume nehotărâte**.

„Some” și „any”

„Some” și „any” reprezintă amândouă o *cantitate nedefinită sau un număr nedefinit* cu sensul „ceva”/„câțiva”. Ele se deosebesc în folosirea lor.

Some: +	Any: -?
► „Some” apare în propoziția afirmativă Exemplu: There are some books on the table.	► „Any” apare în propoziția negativă. Exemplu: There aren't any books on the table.
	► „Any” stă în propoziția interogativă. Exemplu: Are there any books on the table?
► „Some” apare în propoziții interogative când se așteaptă un răspuns afirmativ (ex. la oferirea unui lucru) Exemplu: Would you like some wine? Printre altele el mai stă după: where, when, how Exemplu: Where can I get some books?	► „Any” apare în propoziții afirmative cu sensul „oricare”, „oricând”. Exemplu: You can come any time.

Regula de bază

Excepții

Some	Any
► „Some” apare în propoziția negativă când vorbitorul indică ceva existent sau întâmplat real. Exemplu: I don't need some books. (I've already got some)	► „Any” apare în propozițiile scurte de negare ale frazelor condiționale. Exemplu: If I had any idea, I would tell you.

Aceleași reguli sunt valabile pentru compuşii cu „some” și „any”, de ex.

something/anything	– ceva/ orice
somebody/anybody	– cineva/oricine
someone/anyone	– cineva/oricine
somewhere/anywhere	– undeva/oriunde

Exerciții

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put in „some” or „any”.

Completați cu „some” sau „any”.

- Are there ... potatoes in the basket?
- He hasn't got ... paper.
- I got ... good books for my birthday.
- I had to wait for ... minutes.
- You need ... extra money for your holiday.
- I've seen ... children in the park.
- Isn't there ... yoghurt in the fridge?
- Did you have ... difficulties?
- Isn't there ... bacon left?
- I'm sorry. We haven't got ... French wine at the moment.
- I need ... paper.
- Did you see ... body near the house?
- Have you noticed ... differences?
- Did you buy ... thing special?
- You can't get ... fresh strawberries at the moment.
- I'd like ... sweets. Have you got ... ?
- ... glasses are broken.
- Have you seen Tom ... where?
- He hasn't got ... money.
- ... people were standing around.

II. Put in „some” or „any”. Look out for the exceptions!

Completați cu „some” sau „any”. Atenție la excepții!

- ... of the pens will do.
- Would you like ... coffee?
- Did you have ... thing particular in mind?
- You can pay with ... credit card.
- If I had ... money, I'd lend you ...
- You wouldn't take ... money, would you?
- ... people never know what they want.
- I've never seen ... thing as stupid as that!
- May I have ... more cake?
- If ... thing goes wrong you can phone me.
- Won't you take ... milk in your coffee?
- There are ... good restaurants in town.
- Is there ... thing else you'd like to know?
- ... one who has ever been to England must have seen a picture of the Queen.
- I've never had ... thing to do with that.
- Where can I get ... books on Scotland?
- One of M. Monroe's best films was „... Like It Hot”.
- ... fool knows that 2+2 is 4.
- Has ... one called the police yet?
- Can't I be alone ... where?

Much” și „many”/„little” și „few”

„Much” (mult) și „many” (mulți) se folosesc cu precădere în întrebări și propoziții negative.

Exemplu: She hasn't got much time. – Ea nu are mult timp.

Have you got many friends? – Ai mulți prieteni?

În propozițiile enunțiative afirmative „much” și „many” stau de obicei ca subiect sau în legătură cu „as”, „so”, „how”, „too”.

Exemplu: Much of what you believe is not true. – Mult, din ceea ce crezi, nu este adevărat.

Take as much as you want. – Ia cât vrei de mult.

Rest „much” și „many” sunt înlocuite în propozițiile enunțiative afirmative în următoarele noțiuni: a lot, lots, plenty, a great quantity, a large quantity, a great/good deal (numai pentru „much”), a large number (numai pentru „many”) + of.

Regula
de bază

Exemplu: She has got plenty of time. – Ea are mult timp.

„Much” (mult) și „little” (puțin)

stau numai înaintea *noțiunilor nenumărabile*, adică cuvinte numai cu forme de singular.

Exemplu: We haven't got much sugar left. – Nu ne-a mai rămas mult zahăr.

We have little sugar left. – Ne-a rămas puțin zahăr.

„Much” și „little” pot să apară și fără să se refere la un substantiv.

Exemplu: We didn't do much today – N-am făcut multe azi.

Formele de comparație pentru care sunt valabile aceleași reguli sunt:

much (mult)	– more (mai mult)	– the most (cel mai mult)
little (puțin)	– less (mai puțin)	– the least (cel mai puțin)

„Many” (mulți) și „few” (puțini)

stau numai înaintea *noțiunilor numărabile*, adică înaintea cuvintelor care au forme de plural.

Exemplu: We haven't got many eggs left. – Nu ne-au mai rămas multe ouă.

We have few eggs left. – Ne-au mai rămas puține ouă.

„Many” și „few” pot exista fără referire la un substantiv, numai cu sensul de „mulți/puțini oameni”.

Exemplu: How many were at the party? – Câți (oameni) au fost la petrecere?

Formele de comparație pentru care este valabilă aceeași regulă sunt:

many (mulți)	– more (mai mulți)	– the most (cei mai mulți)
few (puțini)	– fewer (mai puțini)	– the fewest (cei mai puțini)

Exerciții

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put in „much” or „many”.

Completați cu „much” sau „many”.

1. We have written too ... sentences today.
2. I've eaten too ... cakes.
3. He reads so ... books.
4. They have got so ... children.
5. There wasn't ... dirt in the hall.
6. The hostess didn't make ... tea.
7. ... bottles were broken.
8. We didn't have ... fun.
9. How ... cigarettes can you buy on the ferry?
10. How ... is the pullover?
11. ... of us were very tired.
12. How ... wine did you drink?

13. Where did you find so ... stones?
14. There is too ... smoke in the room.
15. We didn't have ... rain in England.
16. ... students don't like homework.
17. The company built so ... houses.
18. Don't make so ... noise.
19. We had too ... drinks.
20. My brother hasn't got ... time.

II. Put in „little” or „few” in front of the nouns.

Completați cu „little” sau „few” în fața substantivelor.

- | | | |
|----------------|------------------|--------------------|
| 1. ... flowers | 8. ... accidents | 15. ... pictures |
| 2. ... noise | 9. ... letters | 16. ... work |
| 3. ... music | 10. ... pens | 17. ... trees |
| 4. ... records | 11. ... cups | 18. ... sleep |
| 5. ... money | 12. ... salt | 19. ... enthusiasm |
| 6. ... boys | 13. ... water | 20. ... rivers |
| 7. ... women | 14. ... sweets | 21. ... books |

III. Form positive statements.

Formați propoziții enunțiative afirmative.

1. I haven't got much time.
2. He hasn't got much money.
3. The students haven't read many books.
4. I can't eat many hamburgers.
5. There aren't many trees in the park.
6. There isn't much noise upstairs.
7. There aren't many jobs available.
8. We didn't have much wind.
9. I haven't eaten many apples.
10. He hasn't drunk much alcohol.

IV. Translate the following expressions.

Traduceți următoarele expresii:

- | | | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. mai puține greșeli | 9. mai puține lămpi | 17. multă supărare |
| 2. mai mulți bani | 10. cei mai puțini elevi | 18. mai puține pagube |
| 3. cel mai puțin timp | 11. mulți prieteni | 19. mai multă ciocolată |
| 4. mai puțină natură | 12. mai mult concediu | 20. cele mai multe cărți |
| 5. mai puțină apă | 13. cele mai multe străzi | 21. mai mulți profesori |
| 6. mai multe magazine | 14. mai multe ferestre | 22. mai puțin ajutor |
| 7. cele mai puține camere | 15. mai puține exerciții | 23. cel mai mult timp |
| 8. mai mult ceai | 16. cele mai multe animale | 24. mai puține case |

„Each”, „every”, „any”, „all” și „whole”

„Each”, „every”, „any”, „all” și „whole” creează adesea dificultăți.

Privire
de an-
samblu

each	– fiecare (luat în parte)
every	– fiecare (luat în general)
any	– fiecare (oricare)
all	– toți (fără excepție)
whole	– tot

Each – fiecare (luat în parte)

Regula
generală

determină o persoană sau un lucru dintr-un *număr finit*. „Each” poate sta înaintea unui substantiv (a) sau poate fi folosit stând singur (b).

Exemplu: (a) You must ask each student in your class. – Tu trebuie să întrebi pe fiecare (luat în parte) din clasa ta.

He gave a present to each boy. – El a dat fiecărui băiat în parte un cadou.

(b) He gave a present to each (one*). – El a dat fiecăruia un cadou.

În combinație cu numerele cardinale „each” pus la sfârșit poate fi folosit cu sensul „câte”.

Exemplu: The oranges are 30 p each. – Portocalele costă câte 30 pence bucata.

Every – fiecare (cu sens general)

și combinațiile sale (everybody, -one – fiecare; everything – totul etc.) sunt folosite, când „fiececare” (persoană sau lucru) sunt amintite în sens *foarte general* (toți fără excepție)

Exemplu: Every child likes sweets. – Fiecărui copil (fără excepție) îi plac dulciurile.

Everybody was busy. – Fiecare (fără excepție) era ocupat.

We met every day last week. – Ne-am întâlnit în fiecare zi (fără excepție) săptămâna trecută.

„Every” stă de obicei înaintea substantivelor la singular (v. exemplele).

Notă:

- În combinația lui „every” cu numerele cardinale, substantivul apare la plural.

Exemplu: every two days – la fiecare două zile

- În combinația lui „every” cu numerele ordinale, substantivul stă la singular.

Exemplu: every second day – fiecare a doua zi

* „Each one” accentuează foarte tare elementul luat individual.

Unele expresii cu „every”:

every other day	– fiecare a doua zi
every now and then	– când și când
every now and again	– când și când

Expresii

Any – fiecare (oricare persoană -x)

și combinațiile sale (anybody, anyone – fiecare; anything – totul etc.) înseamnă în propoziția afirmativă „oricare persoană-x”, „oricare” în sensul „indiferent cine”.

Exemplu: Any policeman can tell you the way to the police station. – Oricare polițist îți poate arăta drumul la secția de poliție.

Anybody can become a member. – Oricine (indiferent cine) poate deveni membru.

All – toți (fără excepție)

are înțeles general când stă înaintea *substantivelor la plural*

Exemplu: All students have to learn. – Toți elevii trebuie să învețe.

All the (my/his/...) + substantiv (la plural) are sensul de „toți dintr-o anumită grupă”.

Exemplu: All the students in this class have to learn. – Toți elevii din această clasă trebuie să învețe.

All + adjectiv are sensul „total/complet”.

Exemplu: My jeans were all dirty. – Pantalonii mei jeans erau complet murdari.

All + substantiv la singular înseamnă „tot”.

Exemplu: I worked all day. – Am lucrat toată ziua.

All + când stă singur înseamnă la singular „tot”, la plural „toți”.

Exemplu: All I know is... – Tot ce știu, este...

All agreed. – Toți au fost de acord.

Unele expresii cu „all”:

all of a sudden	– dintr-o dată
at all	– deloc
nothing at all	– absolut nimic
if at all	– poate dacă
all but	– toți afară de
first of all	– mai întâi de toate

Expresii

GRAMATICA LIMBII ENGLEZE

Whole – tot, complet

denumeste un tot indivizibil. Subliniază totalitatea mai mult decât „all”.

Exemplu: We stayed in the whole day. – Am stat acasă toată ziua.
Tell me the whole truth! – Spune-mi tot adevărul!

Unele expresii cu „whole”:

on the whole	– per total
as a whole	– ca un tot
the whole of (England)	– tot/toată (Anglia)

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put in „each”, „every”, „any”, „all (the)”, or „whole”.
Completați cu „each”, „every”, „any”, „all (the)” sau „whole”.

- ... person makes mistakes.
- ... child likes playing.
- The apples are 8 p ...
- The same can happen to you ... day.
- ... member of the club came at a different time.
- ... doors close automatically.
- We travelled round the ... country.
- ... member of the party must help.
- ... people in the theatre clapped.
- ... of us likes you.
- ... men must die.
- You can use ... TV for this video game.
- ... assault on staff will be prosecuted.
- ... of these articles are worth reading.
- ... these years he hasn't written a single letter.
- The ... club were happy because ... members had won a prize.
- ... visitors get a free meal.
- Grandma gave ... of her grandchildren a book.
- ... individual picture sold for £ 200.
- We have five different pies ... kind is delicious.
- ... parents are invited.
- We sell the pullovers for £ 10 ...

- ... people left the building.
- Serving afternoon tea is the same procedure ... day.
- He stayed in bed ... day.
- At ... meeting we discussed the ... question over and over again.
- ... members of the family looked at ... other.
- ... members of the family looked at ... others.
- He told ... one the whole story.
- ... the answers are correct.

„No”, „not”, „none”, „nobody” („no one”) și „nothing”

no	– nici un
not	– nu
none	– nimeni

Privire
de an-
samblu

No – nici un, nici o

se folosește *atributiv* înaintea *substantivului*.

Exemplu: no money – nici un ban
no help – nici un ajutor

No (nu, cu nimic) poate fi folosit cu funcție adverbială înaintea adjectivelor aflate la un grad de comparație.

Exemplu: There were no fewer than 20 people at the party. – Nu mai puțin de 20 de oameni au fost la petrecere.

Not – nu

stă ca *particulă de negare* adesea după *verbul auxiliar*.

Exemplu: I cannot come. – Eu nu pot să vin.

I do not like him. – Eu nu îl pot suferi.

„Not” poate nega nu numai verbul, ci și *un alt cuvânt*.

Exemplu: Not everybody came. – Nu toată lumea a venit.

Who wants to start? – Not-me. – Cine dorește să înceapă? – Nu eu!

Not a sound could be heard. – Nici un sunet nu se auzea.

None – nici unul

se folosește *substantival* cu referire la un *substantiv* precedent sau care urmează.

Exemplu: Is there any coffee left? – A mai rămas cafea?

No, none at all. – Nu, deloc.

None of my friends helped me. – Nici unul din prietenii mei nu m-a ajutat.

„None” poate fi folosit *cu funcție adverbială* înaintea lui „too” cu sensul de „nu prea” și înaintea lui „the” + comparativ cu sensul de „de loc”.

Exemplu: The wine was none too good. – Vinul n-a fost prea bun.

The food was none the better. – Măncarea n-a fost de loc mai bună.

Nobody (no one) – nici unul, nimeni

este folosit *substantival pentru persoane* fără substantiv de referință.

Exemplu: Nobody (no one) could answer the question. – Nici unul (nimeni) n-a putut răspunde la întrebare.

Nothing – nimic

este folosit *substantival pentru lucruri* fără substantiv de referință.

Exemplu: Nothing could be done. – Nu s-a putut face nimic.

Exercises

Exerciții

Exerciții

Put in „no”, „not”, „none”, „nobody” (no one) or „nothing”.

Completați cu „no”, „not”, „none”, „nobody” (no one) sau „nothing”.

1. He did ... come.
2. ... of the boys complained.
3. These results are ... too bad.
4. There were ... pictures in the room.
5. ... answered the phone.
6. You are ... the better than your friend.
7. I'm sorry. I can ... tell you the way.
8. ... likes him.
9. ... remains to be done.
10. Who wants to help me? - ... me!
11. He practised all day, but he can play ... the better.
12. ... of my friends helped me.
13. He has ... friends.
14. He does ... have any friends.
15. ... was done because ... was there.
16. ... a single car was sold.
17. ... could help him because we wanted ... help.
18. He had ... money with him.
19. It was ... easy to find him.
20. He failed in the test although he was ... too stupid.
21. ... even my brother visited me when I was ill.

22. Bob tried everything but his car was ... the faster.

23. He knew ... of the whole matter.

24. ... has ever seen him in person.

25. I can tell you ... It's all secret.

26. We knew ... of our neighbours when we moved there.

27. We have ... idea where our sister is.

28. ... is worse than losing all your papers.

29. There is ... that can make me change my mind.

30. ... of his answers were wrong.

„Both”, „either” și „neither”

Both – amândoi

Este folosit numai când este vorba despre două persoane sau lucruri.

Exemplu: Both men were caught by the police.

sau: Both (of) the men were caught by the police.

Amândoi bărbații au fost prinși de poliție.

„Both” poate fi folosit substantival stând singur referitor la un substantiv la plural.

Exemplu: Both came. – Amândoi au venit.

Either – unul (sau celălalt) din doi, acel unul

arată că *fiecare din grupul de doi* este considerat *ca atare*. „Either” poate fi folosit adjectival (înaintea unui substantiv la singular).

Exemplu: You can use either entrance. – Poți folosi oricare intrare (din două).

„Either” poate fi folosit și substantival (Stând singur referitor la un substantiv la plural).

Exemplu: Either will be all right. – Oricare e bun.

Neither – nici unul (din doi)

este *negarea lui „either”* și poate fi folosit de asemenea adjectival (înaintea unui substantiv la singular) sau substantival (stând singur referindu-se la un substantiv la plural).

Exemplu: Neither answer is correct. – Nici unul din cele două răspunsuri nu este corect.

Neither was successful. – Nici unul din cei doi n-a avut succes.

Regula
de bază

Exercises

Exerciții

I. Put in „both” or „either”.

Completați cu „both” sau „either”.

1. ... the parents agreed.
2. You can go along ... street.
3. ... buses go to the station.
4. The 10 and the 12 go to the station. You can take ... bus.
5. ... of the children are very good students.
6. ... of us were invited.
7. ... these books are mine.
8. London is situated on ... side of the Thames.
9. ... teams are good.
10. ... of the teams may win.
11. Two people were injured ... had serious injuries.
12. ... the witnesses were questioned by the police.
13. I lost ... my gloves.
14. There are fields on ... side of the road.
15. ... her eyes are injured.
16. He speaks ... languages, English and French.
17. There were candles at ... end of the table.
18. She has two children ... are taller than she is.
19. Do you like the two poems? – I don't like ... (of them).
20. ... thieves were arrested.
21. Two people applied for the job ... of the two had good chances.
22. Tom had two sons ... wanted to help him.
23. ... roads lead to London.
24. ... way would take him home.
25. He had to sell ... his cars.

Final Test: Indefinite Quantifiers

Test final: numeralul nehotărât

1. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții:

1. Eu merg în fiecare zi la plimbare.
2. Anul acesta sunt multe cireșe în copac.
3. Aproape fiecare elev detestă temele pentru acasă.
4. Noi avem doi vecini. Amândoi sunt foarte drăguți.
5. Dl S. pare să aibă mulți bani.
6. Toți muncitorii din această firmă vor primi mai mult la salariu.
7. Ai dori ceva de băut?
8. Unele propoziții sunt chiar grele.
9. Dacă aş avea ceva timp, te-aş ajuta.
10. Nimic nu-mi va schimba părerea.
11. Mai am încă de scris așa de multe scrisori, că probabil voi mai fi ocupat încă multe ore.
12. Nimeni nu este fără defecte.
13. Doar puține tablouri mi-au plăcut la expoziție.
14. Multă lume nu știe câtă energie ar putea fi economisită, dacă s-ar respecta câteva reguli.
15. Câte mile sunt până la Londra?
16. Erau puține speranțe să fie găsiți băieții.
17. Câți oaspeți vor veni?
18. Te voi chema înapoi în câteva minute.
19. Unii sunt de părere că franceza ar fi mai ușoară decât engleza.
20. Toți elevii se bucură de venirea vacanței.
21. Povestește-mi ceva despre călătoria ta în America.
22. Profesorul a dat fiecăruia din noi o copie.
23. Tu trebuie să iei tabletele acestea în fiecare seară.
24. Pentru că vremea a fost așa de rea, nu era lume pe plajă.
25. Nici unul din oaspeți n-a avut voie să vadă încăperile private.
26. Nici una din cele două propuneri nu a fost bună.
27. Tu poți să cumperi discul în orice magazin de discuri.
28. Totul trebuie să aibă un sfârșit.
29. Aceasta nu m-ajută cu nimic.
30. Doar puține femei sunt în parlament.

Word Order

Topica în propoziție

Limbile sintetice, ca de ex. limba latină, relevă relațiile dintre părțile de propoziție prin terminații flexionare. În limba engleză, dispărând aproape toate terminațiile flexionare, subiectul și complementul au formele la fel (în afară de pronume). Pentru a face o distincție clară între subiectiv și obiectiv, este nevoie de o ordine riguroasă în propoziție. Limbile care ilustrează relația între părțile de propoziție printr-o ordine riguroasă se numesc **limbi analitice**.

Word Order in Statements

Ordinea cuvintelor în propoziții afirmative

Ordinea firească a cuvintelor este:

Subiect (S) (Subject)	Predicat (P) (Predicate)	Complement (C) (Object)
--------------------------	-----------------------------	----------------------------

Exemplu: Sally	buys	a record.
I	can speak	English.
The Millers	have	a house.
She	has written	a letter
He	doesn't like	football.

Notă:

Această ordine se păstrează:

- când la începutul propoziției se folosește un complement circumstanțial.

Exemplu: Now **they entered the house.**

	S	P	C
Atunci	ei	au intrat	în casă.
	S	P	C

- când o propoziție secundară precede propoziția principală
Exemplu: When I came in, **my friend was reading a book.**

	S	P	C
Când am intrat în cameră,	prietenul meu	citea o carte.	
	S	P	C

- la timpurile compuse

Exemplu: I **have written a postcard.**

	S	P	C
Eu am scris o carte poștală.			
	S	P	C

- în propoziția care succede vorbirea directă.

Exemplu: „I'll come”, **he said to me.**

	S	P	C
„Eu voi veni”,	îmi spuse el mie.		
	P	S	C

Word Order in Sentences with Two Objects

Topica în propoziții cu două complemente

Propoziție poate avea un *complement direct* (Cd) și un *complement indirect* (Ci). Un complement indirect apare când o persoană (rar un lucru) se consideră că participă numai indirect la acțiune.

Exemplu: I **gave Paul the book.**

	S	P	Ci	Cd
Eu i-am dat lui Paul cartea.				
	S	P	Ci	Cd

De obicei *complementul indirect* stă în fața *complementului direct*. (v. exemplu). Dacă însă complementul indirect trebuie puternic accentuat, atunci complementul direct stă în fața complementului indirect.

Exemplu: I **gave the book to Paul.**

	S	P	Cd	Ci
I-am dat cartea lui Paul.				
	S	P	Cd	Ci

Regula de bază

Notă:

- Dacă se plasează complementul indirect după complementul direct, atunci la multe verbe trebuie adăugat „to”.

Dintre ele fac parte: to announce, to bring, to deliver, to describe, to dictate, to explain, to give, to grant, to hand, to introduce, to lend, to mention, to offer, to owe, to pay, to point out, to promise, to read (cuiva), to report, to say, to sell, to send, to suggest, to teach, to tell, to wish, to write.

Exemplu: I brought the book to him.

S P Cd Ci

I-am adus lui cartea.

- Dacă se pune complementul indirect după complementul direct, atunci cu unele verbe trebuie folosit „for”.

Dintre ele fac parte: to buy, to cook, to find (a căuta), to get (a procura), to leave (a lăsa rest), to make, to order, to pour, to spare (a scuți).

Exemplu: I bought a book for him.

S P Cd Ci

Am cumpărat o carte pentru el.

- Nu se acceptă inversiuni cu „to” sau „for” la următoarele verbe:
- to ask s.o. s.th. – a întreba pe cineva (de) ceva
 - to envy s.o. s.th. – a invidia pe cineva pentru ceva
 - to forgive s.o. s.th. – a-i ierta cuiva ceva
 - to save s.o. s.th. – a scuți pe cineva de ceva
 - (s.o. – someone; – cuiva;
 - s.th. – something – la ceva)

Exemplu: I envy you for your new car.

S P Ci Cd

Te invidiez pentru noua ta mașină.

Exceptions to the S-P-O-Rule (Inversion)

Excepții de la regula S-P-C (inversiune)

În unele cazuri se încalcă regula S – P – O și predicatul trece în fața subiectului. (Această schimbare se numește **inversiune**):

- În exclamații fără complement unde „here” sau „there” introduc propoziția, predicatul trece în fața subiectului (cel mai adesea la „to come”, „to go”, „to be”) dar numai când verbul stă la Present Tense Simple sau Past Tense Simple.

Exemplu: Here comes the bus! – Iată că vine autobuzul!

P S

There goes the train! – Acolo pleacă trenul!

P S

- În exclamații fără complement după *adverbe de loc* care introduc propoziția, care depind de verb, predicatul poate sta în fața subiectului, atunci când adverbele de loc trebuie accentuate în mod deosebit.

Exemplu: In came the boss. – Și iată că intră șeful!

P S

Out went the lights. – (Atunci) se stinseră (cu adevărat) luminile.

P S

- Dacă la începutul propoziției în vorbirea emfatică stau *adverbe de timp* sau *adjective folosite predicativ*, are loc de asemenea o inversiune.

Exemplu: First came the news. – Mai întâi au fost știrile.

P S

Great was the joy. – Mare a fost bucuria.

P S

- Dacă la începutul propoziției apar *adverbe* sau *conjunții cu sens negativ sau restrictiv*, verbul auxiliar (VA) trece în fața subiectului.

Dintre ele fac parte: hardly, in vain, little, neither...nor, never, no sooner...than, nor, not only...but also, rarely, scarcely, seldom.

Exemplu: No sooner had he started his speech than the lights went out.

P(VA) S P(VP) C

De-abia își începuse cuvântarea, când s-au stins luminile.

- În propoziții care exprimă dorințe verbul auxiliar trece înaintea subiectului.

Exemplu: May he rest in peace. – Odihnească-se în pace.

P(VA) S P(VP)

- În propoziții condiționale fără conjuncție verbul auxiliar (VA) trece înaintea subiectului.

Exemplu: Had I met him earlier, all would have been better.

P(VA) S P(VP) C

Dacă l-aș fi întâlnit mai devreme, totul ar fi fost mai bine.

► În propozițiile intercalate sau secundare în vorbirea directă subiectul (dacă este un substantiv) poate sta după predicat.

Exemplu: „Tell me the truth”, **said Maud.**

P S
„Spune-mi adevărul!” spuse Maud.

Word Order in Questions

Ordinea cuvintelor în propoziții interogative

Ordinea normală Subiect – Predicat – Complement o găsim numai în întrebări în care *cuvântul interogativ este subiect* (mereu la *who* – cine) sau este le gal de subiect.

Exemplu: **Who is calling me?**

S P C
What **car** **is standing** in the garage?
S P

Regula
de bază

În toate celelalte cazuri verbul auxiliar (VA) trece înaintea subiectului (inverse).

Exemplu: **Has he written a letter?**

P(VA) S P(VP) C
What **can I do?**

P(VA) S P(VP) C
Where **did you get this pullover?**
P(VA) S P(VP) C

Notă: Prepoziția care aparține cuvântului interogativ stă de obicei la sfârșitul unei întrebări.

Exemplu: What is it for? – Pentru ce este asta?

Exercises

Exerciții

Form statements.

Formați propoziții enunțative.

1. my father/a new car/bought/some years ago
2. watch/I/TV/sometimes/in the evening
3. lent/Michael/me/£ 10
4. his father/didn't/him/see
5. sent/my aunt/last week/a parcel
6. drank/lemonade/at the party/the children
7. you/wish/for the future/all the best/I
8. cooked/she/a meal/for her husband
9. told/he/the story/has/to everybody
10. written/have/him/a letter/today
11. has/shown/just/the guide/to the visitors/the rooms
12. brought/us/the postman/a letter
13. coffee/the secretary/will/for the boss/make
14. I/have/such beautiful flowers/seen/never
15. Mary/for her father/a drink/got
16. you/forgive/should/his bad behaviour
17. repaired/for me/my bike/my father/last week
18. will/some trouble/save/her/that
19. is a pullover/for me/knitting/just/my mother
20. have/his name/him/asked/I
21. explained/the teacher/the sentences/the students
22. bought/my father/me/the record
23. he/not/understand/could/me
24. envy/I/her/her nice dress

Form questions.

Formulați întrebări.

1. the children/are/in the garden/playing
2. broke/the vase/who
3. whose mother/you/did/yesterday/meet
4. Peter/how long/has/English/now/been learning
5. you/ did/come/why/so late
6. where/going/all the people/are/to
7. you/did/him/ask/the money/to give/back
8. what boy/the window/broke
9. where/you/bought/have/this good book

10. you/who/this present/gave
11. he/what time/come/will
12. haven't/you/why/asked/him
13. took/these photos/who
14. did/you/whose books/find/in the classroom
15. which/do/car/prefer/you
16. did/meet/yesterday/who/your brother
17. since when/you/not/have/him/seen
18. how/you/do/do
19. you/call/do/what/this animal
20. your mother/is/now
21. ever/been/you/have/to Paris
22. you/like/do/Sam's little brother
23. your secretary/can/speak/fluent/English
24. your homework/have/finished/you

Final Test: Word Order

Test final: ordinea cuvintelor

1. Translate the following sentences.

Traduceți următoarele propoziții.

1. Să te ierte Dumnezeu!
2. Poți să-mi împrumuți douăzeci de lire?
3. După ploaie vine soare.
4. Așa e viața.
5. Eu nu știu să merg pe bicicletă. – Nici eu.
6. I-am trimis lui ieri un pachet.
7. El și-a rupt brațul.
8. Când el a ieșit din casă, a văzut o persoană străină.
9. El a plecat la ora 7 de acasă.
10. La ce copil te referi?
11. Dacă ar fi să plouă mâine, voi rămâne acasă.
12. A făcut ea o greșală?
13. Pe cine ai întâlnit ieri în oraș?
14. Unde îți vei petrece vacanța?
15. Peter îi citește bunicului său o poveste.
16. Ai fi atât de drăguț să-i citești tatălui tău scrisoarea?
17. Câte persoane locuiesc în această casă?
18. Prietenul tău vorbește limba italiană?
19. Să-ți trimit scrisoarea?
20. Acolo vine trenul!

British and American English in Contrast

Paralelă între engleza britanică și engleza americană

Între engleza britanică (BE) și engleza americană (AE) există diferențe în următoarele domenii:

- Pronunție
- Ortografie
- Gramatică
- Vocabular

Pronunciation

Pronunție

BE	AE
ex. dance [da:ns]	adesea: [æ] ex. dance [dæns]
după n, d, t, th, s se pronunță [j] înaintea lui [u:]	după n, d, t, th, s nu se pronunță [j] înaintea lui [u:]
ex. student ['stju:dənt]	ex. student ['stu:dənt]
„r” rămâne mut înaintea consoanelor și la sfârșitul cuvântului	„r” se pronunță înaintea consoanelor și la sfârșitul cuvântului
ex. art [a:t]	ex. art [ɑ:t]
„t” între vocale se pronunță [t]	„t” între vocale se pronunță [d]
ex. water ['wɔ:tə]	ex. water ['wɔ:də]
silaba finală „-ile” se pronunță [ail]	silaba finală „-ile” se pronunță [əl]
ex. missile ['misail]	ex. missile ['misəl]

Deosebiri principale

Spelling

Ortografie

Deose-
biri prin-
cipale

BE	AE
silaba finală neaccentuată „-our”	„-or”
ex. neighbour	ex. neighbor
terminația accentuată „-ence”	„-ense”
ex. offence	ex. offense
terminația „-re”	„-er”
ex. centre	ex. center
La adăugarea lui „-ing”, „-ed”, „-er”, „-est” la silabele neaccentuate „-el”, „-al”, „-ol”, „-ill” se dublează „l”	La adăugarea lui „-ing”, „-ed”, „-er”, „-est” la silabele neaccentuate „-el”, „-al”, „-ol”, „-ill” nu se dublează „l”
ex. quarrelling	ex. quarreling
„-ise”/„-ize”	„-ize”
ex. to organise/to organize	ex. to organize
„-logue”	„-log”
ex. catalogue	ex. catalog
„-gramme”	„-gram”
ex. programme	ex. program

Grammar

Gramatică

Deose-
biri prin-
cipale

BE	AE
Have you got ...?	Do you have ...?
to get - got - got	to get - got - gotten
to prove - proved - proved	to prove - proved - proven
Present Perfect	familiar: Past Tense
ex. I have already written a letter.	ex. I already wrote a letter.
Adverb	adesea: Adjectiv
ex. He writes awfully.	ex. He writes awful.

Vocabulary

Vocabular

Deose-
biri prin-
cipale

	AE	RO
ancare:		
bergine	egg-plant	vânătă
cookie	cookie	fursec
French fries	French fries	cartofi prăjiți
stove	stove	sobă
chips	chips	chips de cartofi
pitcher	pitcher	cană
hamburger meat	hamburger meat	carne tocată
corn	corn	porumb
candy	candy	dulciuri
can	can	cutie (de conservă)
transport:		
airplane	airplane	avion
trunk	trunk	portbagaj
car/auto(mobile)	car/auto(mobile)	automobil
parking lot	parking lot	loc de parcare
detour	detour	deviere
divided highway	divided highway	autostradă rapidă
gas station	gas station	stație de benzină
freight train	freight train	tren de marfă
truck	truck	camion
highway, freeway	highway, freeway	autostradă
licence plate	licence plate	plăcuță de număr
gas(oline)	gas(oline)	benzină
sidewalk	sidewalk	trotuar
railroad	railroad	cale ferată
round trip ticket	round trip ticket	bilet dus-întors
one way ticket	one way ticket	bilet dus
stop lights	stop lights	semafor
subway	subway	metrou
windshield	windshield	parbriz

Final Test: British and American English

Test final: engleza britanică și engleza americană

Write the letter in BE.

Scrieți scrisoarea în BE.

Dear Cathy,

I live in a house not far from the town center. Our apartment is on the first floor, so we don't have to take the elevator to take the rubbish to the garbage bins as the other neighbors have to do. My father owns a truck, so my mother and I often spend the evening together. There are some nice theaters in the neighborhood. Gasoline is not very cheap here. So the best way of traveling is to take the subway or the railroad. In fall I prefer reading books, but the bookstores are getting more and more expensive and the sales-clerks are often very unfriendly, but it's no use quarreling with them. I have to stop now in order to mail this letter in time.

Yours,
Mary

Appendix

Anexă

Appendix 1: Irregular Verbs

Anexa 1: Verbe neregulate

be	was/were	been	a fi
beat	beat	beaten	a bate
become	became	become	a deveni
begin	began	begun	a începe
bet	bet	bet	a paria
bite	bit	bitten	a mușca
blow	blew	blown	a sufla
break	broke	broken	a rupe/a frânge
bring	brought	brought	a aduce

BE	AE	RO
Natură:		
autumn	fall	toamnă
embankment	levee	îndiguire
insect	insect/bug	insectă
Îmbrăcăminte:		
braces	suspender	bretele
dressing-gown	bathrobe	capot
handbag	handbag/purse	poșetă
trousers	pants/trousers	pantaloni
Alte domenii:		
at home	home	acasă
bookshop	bookstore	librărie
chemist's	drugstore	farmacie
company	corporation	societate (firmă)
dustbin	garbage can	coș de gunoi
dustman	garbage man	gunoier
film	movie	film artistic
flat	apartment	apartament
ground floor	first floor	parter
laundrette	laundromat	spălătorie
lift	elevator	lift/ascensor
luggage	baggage	bagaj
post	mail	poșta
post code	zip code	cod poștal
postman	mailman	poștaş
prison	jail/penitentiary	penitenciar
(public) toilets	restrooms	toaletă (publică)
rubber	eraser	gumă de șters
shop assistant	sales-clerk	vânzător/oare

build	built	built	a construi
burn	burnt	burnt	a arde/a incendia
buy	bought	bought	a cumpăra
C			
catch	caught	caught	a prinde
choose	chose	chosen	a alege
come	came	come	a veni
cost	cost	cost	a costa
cut	cut	cut	a tăia
D			
deal	dealt	dealt	a se ocupa/a face comerț
draw	drew	drawn	a trage/a desena
dream	dreamt	dreamt	a visa
drink	drank	drunk	a bea
drive	drove	driven	a conduce (vehicul)
do	did	done	a face
E			
eat	ate	eaten	a mânca
F			
fall	fell	fallen	a cădea
feed	fed	fed	a hrăni
feel	felt	felt	a simți
fight	fought	fought	a lupta
find	found	found	a găsi
fly	flew	flown	a zbura
forget	forgot	forgotten	a uita
forgive	forgave	forgiven	a ierta
freeze	froze	frozen	a îngheța
G			
get	got	got	a primi/a obține
give	gave	given	a da
go	went	gone	a merge
grow	grew	grown	a crește/a cultiva
H			
hang	hung	hung	a atârna
have	had	had	a avea
hear	heard	heard	a auzi
hide	hid	hidden	a (se) ascunde

hit	hit	a lovi/a nimeri
held	held	a ține
hurt	hurt	a răni
kept	kept	a (re-/men-)ține/a păstra
knitted/knit	knitted/knit	a tricota
knew	known	a ști, a cunoaște
laid	laid	a pune (culcat)
led	led	a conduce
learnt/learned	learnt/learned	a învăța/a afla
left	left	a părăsi
lent	lent	a împrumuta/a da cu împrumut
let	let	a lăsa/a da cu chirie
lay	lain	a sta (culcat)
lit/lighted	lit/lighted	a aprinde
lost	lost	a pierde
made	made	a face
meant	meant	a însemna, a opina
met	met	a întâlni
overtook	overtaken	a depăși
paid	paid	a plăti
proved	proved/proven	a dovedi
put	put	a pune
read	read	a citi
rode	ridden	a călări
rang	rung	a suna, a telefona
ran	run	a alerga, a fugi
said	said	a spune
saw	seen	a vedea

sell	sold	sold	a vinde
send	sent	sent	a trimite
set	set	set	a pune
shake	shook	shaken	a scutura
shine	shone	shone	a străluci, a lumina
shoot	shot	shot	a împușca/a trage
shut	shut	shut	a închide
sing	sang	sung	a cânta
sink	sank	sunk	a se scufunda
sit	sat	sat	a sta așezat
sleep	slept	slept	a dormi
smell	smelt/smelled	smelt/smelled	a mirosi
speak	spoke	spoken	a vorbi
spell	spelt/spelled	spelt/spelled	a spune pe litere/a ortografia
spend	spent	spent	a petrece, a cheltui
split	split	split	a împărți, despica
spoil	spoilt/spoiled	spoilt/spoiled	a strica, a alinta
spread	spread	spread	a răspândi
stand	stood	stood	a sta (în picioare)
steal	stole	stolen	a fura
swear	swore	sworn	a (în)jura
T			
take	took	taken	a lua
teach	taught	taught	a învăța (pe cineva)
tear	tore	torn	a rupe/a sfâșia
tell	told	told	a povesti, a zice
think	thought	thought	a gândi
throw	threw	thrown	a arunca
U			
understand	understood	understood	a înțelege
W			
wake	woke	woken	a se trezi
wear	wore	worn	a purta (îmbrăcăminte)
weep	wept	wept	a plânge
win	won	won	a câștiga
write	wrote	written	a scrie

Appendix 2: Key to Exercises and Tests

Anexa 2: Rezolvarea exercițiilor și testelor

- 19 I. 1. -; 2. -s; 3. -; 4. -; 5. -; 6. -; 7. -; 8. -s; 9. -; 10. -s; 11. -s; 12. -; 13. -s; 14. -s; 15. -; 16. -; 17. -s; 18. -s; 19. -s; 20. -; 21. -; 22. -s; 23. -s; 24. -.
- II. 1. -; 2. e; 3. e; 4. e; 5. -; 6. -; 7. -; 8. e; 9. e; 10. -.
- III. 1. ie; 2. y; 3. y; 4. y; 5. ie; 6. y; 7. ie; 8. ie; 9. ie; 10. ie.
- IV. 1. Do you live; 2. I don't live; 3. live; 4. works; 5. doesn't like; 6. likes; 7. doesn't want; 8. go; 9. goes/attends; 10. come; 11. wear; 12. takes; 13. has/cycles; 14. watch/play; 15. don't go/ get up.
- 22 I. 1. leaving; 2. riding; 3. referring; 4. sitting; 5. hiding; 6. reading; 7. cooking; 8. typing; 9. meeting; 10. having; 11. bringing; 12. getting; 13. repairing; 14. coming.
- II. 1. are discussing; 2. is playing; 3. are opening; 4. are making; 5. are writing; 6. is leaving; 7. are cleaning; 8. is telephoning; 9. is shining; 10. is playing; 11. am watching; 12. are cutting; 13. is correcting; 14. is going; 15. is baking; 16. are sleeping; 17. are having; 18. is washing; 19. is climbing; 20. are having.
- III. 1. Next Saturday we are having a football game; 2. At the moment I am practising for our class test; 3. Mr Steiger is just repairing his car; 4. We are just having dinner; 5. Listen! The neighbour's dog is barking again; 6. He is just reading an interesting book; 7. My father is working in the garden at the moment; 8. Susan is just visiting her friend; 9. The secretary is just telephoning; 10. Come on, let's go swimming. The sun is shining; 11. Mr Meyer is just writing a letter, and Mrs Meyer is knitting; 12. Look! The fire brigade is coming; 13. Mrs Cooper is just lying on the balcony and is sunbathing; 14. The workers are just building a new house; 15. He is just taking photos of the places of interest; 16. The students are just having a reading competition; 17. At the moment we are taking part in a French course; 18. She is just sitting in her room and is reading; 19. Mother is just shouting at her son; 20. He is just taking the dog for a walk.
- 25 I. 1. watches/prefers; 2. is working/stars; 3. are going; 4. answer/am having; 5. eat/are having; 6. see/go; 7. meet/go; 8. is playing/hear; 9. sleeps/talks; 10. speak/am; 11. go/are staying; 12. goes/goes; 13. isn't/is working; 14. don't like; 15. sings/is having; 16. is raining/go; 17. hates/thinks/are; 18. go/are waiting; 19. go/is visiting; 20. loves/eats.
- II. 1. Listen! Mrs Simon is playing the piano again, although she knows that her neighbour is ill and (is) lying in bed. 2. Sometimes the old lady doesn't leave her flat the whole day, but today she is spending all day in the garden. 3. He occasionally visits his brother in Hampstead, but apart

from that he doesn't travel very often. 4. Lady Mary has her tea at 5 o'clock daily. But butler Charles is ill. Therefore Sue is serving the tea today. 5. Bill is just learning his French words, although he usually plays outside at this time, but tomorrow he is writing a class test. 6. Look! Here in this photo Susan and Mary are just lying on the beach. 7. At the moment my brothers are working in the park, but it's only a holiday job. They attend college, but are having summer holidays at the moment. 8. Mrs Cooper loves Italian food, but at the moment she is eating only vegetables and fruit because she wants to lose weight. 9. „What are you doing here in the hospital?” – „I'm here with Sam. He is just having an X-ray.” 10. I am just reporting about the car race in Indianapolis. Car No. 5 is just overtaking car No. 3. It's a surprise because car No. 3 usually wins.

p. 28

- I. 1. occurred; 2. came; 3. planned; 4. gave; 5. saw; 6. destroyed; 7. changed; 8. applied; 9. painted; 10. worked; 11. enjoyed; 12. heard; 13. listened to; 14. arrived; 15. drank; 16. put; 17. wrote; 18. drove; 19. read; 20. understood.
- II. 1. didn't go; 2. went; 3. got up/went/opened; 4. invented; 5. did you buy; 6. Did you see; 7. did you like; 8. opened/began; 9. wrote/was; 10. rang/got; 11. passed/started; 12. was; 13. had/was not allowed; 14. sold/moved; 15. was/could already play (he was already able to play).
- III. He was born at Bridges Creek in 1732. In the 1750s he became commander-in-chief of Virginia. In 1759 he married a wealthy young widow. In 1759 the people elected him to the Virginia Parliament. From 1774 to 1775 he was a delegate to the 1st and 2nd Continental Congress, which chose him commander-in-chief of the Continental Army in the Revolutionary War. In 1781 he defeated the British Army in the battle of Yorktown. In 1789 he became the first President of the United States. He kept America neutral during the French Revolution. The Americans elected him for a second term of office in 1793. In 1799 he died at Mount Vernon, Virginia.

p. 31

- I. 1. Bob was dancing; 2. Peter was drinking; 3. Susan and Mary were using; 4. Some children were having; 5. The dog was lying; 6. Paula was wearing; 7. The children were playing; 8. Some hamburgers were lying; 9. Three children were dancing; 10. Empty bottles were lying; 11. Bob was smoking; 12. Four girls were playing; 13. The cat was trying; 14. The neighbours were coming; 15. The telephone was ringing.
- II. 1. While father was typing ...; I was tidying ...; 2. While the stewards were serving ...; Mr Scott was sleeping ...; 3. While Mrs Martin was trying ..., the children were making ...; 4. While the boys were playing ..., their mothers were enjoying ...; 5. While the band was playing ..., all the spectators were waiting. 6. While the actors were practising ..., the workers were decorating ...; 7. While my aunt was talking ... I

was doing ...; 8. While the children were sleeping, their parents were watching TV. 9. While Lord and Lady S. were having tea, their servants were preparing ...; 10. While the patient was telling ..., the doctor was looking ...; 11. While the reporter was interviewing ..., she was polishing ...; 12. While the students were writing ..., the teacher was watching ...; 13. While Mrs B. was doing ..., Mr B. was collecting ...; 14. While the children were having ..., Mrs. C was visiting ...; 15. While the new neighbours were moving in, we were working ...

- III. 1. We were sleeping ...; 2. ... the old lady was waiting ... 3. The B. were having ...; 4. I was writing ...; 5. The band was playing ...; 6. We were driving ...; 7. Mrs C. was doing ...; 8. Mr S. was playing ...; 9. her friend was waiting ...; 10. ... he was still breathing. 11. he was trying ...; 12. We were sitting ...; 13. ... my parents were already sleeping. 14. The teacher was explaining ...; 15. We were standing ...

- I. 1. were lying/were having; 2. was walking/met; 3. was getting off/were trying; 4. wanted/were not/was/were you doing; 5. recognized/was wearing; 6. was trying/came/hit; 7. ate/helped; 8. came/could not come/ was having; 9. started/were trying; 10. climbed/switched on/went; 11. heard/ burst; 12. was examining/was waiting; 13. broke/went; 14. were you doing/took place; 15. was checking/was waiting; 16. were watching/ started/switched off/was; 17. announced/appeared; 18. was doing/didn't like; 19. was/were playing/was sitting/(was) studying; 20. visited/went.
- II. 1. The Inspector entered the bar with the stranger and asked, „What were you doing between 9 and 10 o'clock yesterday?” 2. The stranger answered, „When the murder took place, I was sitting in the bar and (was) playing cards with Mr Doodle.” 3. „Did anybody see you?” Inspector Monday wanted to know. 4. „While we were playing cards, a young man who was standing at the bar all the time, was watching us”. 5. Slowly, the Inspector got (was getting) (becoming) nervous. 6. Finally he thought for a moment and then asked the stranger, „What was the man doing at the moment when you entered the bar?”; 7. When I saw him for the first time, he was standing in the corner and was talking to the waiter in a low voice. 8. Monday seemed to be very surprised when he heard this. 9. While he was talking to the stranger, he heard that Mr Doodle was talking to the waiter. 10. Monday didn't understand what they were talking about. 11. While he was still trying to understand the two of them, Inspector Datson came in. 12. When he saw what was going on (happening) in the bar, he rushed to Inspector Monday. 13. He gave him a piece of paper which the stranger recognized at once. 14. While Monday was staring at the piece of paper, the stranger thought for a moment how he could escape from the bar. 15. When he suddenly ran to the door, he was arrested by the two policemen who were waiting outside.

p. 38

- I.** 1. has smoked; 2. has never gone; 3. hasn't been; 4. has never written; 5. has already written; 6. has never gone; 7. has taken; 8. has done; 9. hasn't helped; 10. has already been/has already caused.
- II.** 1. Have you ever worked; 2. Have you ever organized; 3. Have you already passed; 4. Since when have you been; 5. Have you already learned; 6. Have you applied; 7. Have you ever had; 8. Have you already asked; 9. Have you ever been; 10. Have you ever had.
- III.** 1. How long have you known him? 2. He had just closed the window. 3. We have already solved five exercises. 4. They have already walked 10 miles. 5. He hasn't spoken to anybody all evening. 6. I have never been to Australia. 7. Since he became a dog owner he has gone for a walk twice a day. 8. Fred has never read Shakespeare. 9. I haven't seen him for a long time. 10. He has just left the office. 11. Have you ever walked to Greenwich? 12. He has had this illness for 2 years. 13. For 4 weeks she hasn't done anything for school. 14. She has already been a good student. 15. I haven't spoken to the director yet. 16. She hasn't spoken to him for 2 years. 17. Have you already listened to the new record by David Bowie? 18. Our neighbour has always been very friendly so far. 19. I haven't been on holidays for 2 years. 20. Since he joined this company he has earned much more.

p. 40

- I.** 1. S. has been doing; 2. P. and P. have been playing; 3. Mother has been working; 4. I have been; 5. The young children have been playing; 6. The neighbours have been lying; 7. S. has been knitting; 8. D. has been trying; 9. Grandfather has been sitting ... and reading; 10. The cat has been chasing ... and playing.
- II.** 1. I have been learning; 2. We have been living; 3. He has already solved; 4. It has been raining; 5. you haven't been waiting; 6. He hasn't eaten; 7. has been working; 8. He has known him; 9. Have you ever seen; 10. have you been sitting; 11. They haven't finished; 12. My uncle has already found; 13. Mr C. has been driving ... He has already driven; 14. You have told ... I have never believed; 15. M. has been drinking ... He has already drunk; 16. Mrs S. has been talking ... She hasn't talked; 17. S. has just cleaned; 18. you haven't been listening; 19. What have you been doing? 20. The M. have been taking ... They have already taken.
- III.** 1. Susan has been on a diet for 3 weeks and has already lost 5 pounds. 2. Mr S. has already been having customers all morning. He has already sold two cars. 3. Paul has been playing chess for 2 hours. He has never played against Tom. 4. I have been living in the USA for 2 years now and haven't missed my country yet. 5. Mrs C. has been telephoning with her friend for half an hour. She has already spent more than £ 5 for the phone call. 6. What have you been doing all afternoon? Have you been waiting for me? 7. H. has been saving for a motorbike for months. He has already saved £ 100. 8. I have already been looking for my glasses

since 10 o'clock, but I haven't found them yet. 9. I have never been to America, but I've already read a lot about his country. 10. He has been working in this firm for 5 years and there have never been any problems so far. 11. M. has already been sitting at her desk for 2 hours and still hasn't answered all the questions yet. 12. He has been playing golf in the club for 2 years and has already won some prizes. 13. Have you already had breakfast or have you been sleeping till now? 14. „Has the postman already been here?” – „Yes, I've already put the post on your desk”. 15. He has been living here for 2 months, but he hasn't found a new job yet.

- I.** 1. hasn't seen/arrived; 2. looked at/hasn't decided; 3. have never liked/didn't watch; 4. enjoyed/had/hasn't even looked at; 5. arrived/couldn't speak (weren't able to speak); 6. found out/had to learn; 7. have made; 8. was/have continuously been trying/landed; 9. has considered; 10. came/has been living; 11. got/has already taught; 12. have visited/have never wanted; 13. saw/were; 14. have visited; 15. came/ were; 16. (have) never liked/went up/have also stopped; 17. have always hated/have never played; 18. has been working/has not visited; 19. were/came/has been staying/has been making/arrived; 20. Did you really enjoy ...? I have never seen.
- II.** 1. S. hasn't been here for a long time; but he has already eaten three steaks. 2. When J. came to Germany for the first time, he couldn't (wasn't able to) speak a word of German. 3. We have been living in our new house for 3 weeks and haven't got to know our neighbours yet. 4. Since Mr S. moved to Hamburg, we haven't heard from him. 5. Erwin has never been to the Wild West. 6. When he came to New Mexico last year, he was surprised that there were still Indians there. 7. He has been living in New Mexico for 8 months now and has already learned many Indian words. 8. When I visited him some weeks ago, he was just trying to talk to an old chief. 9. Some days later the chief told me in English. 10. „In the 8 months since he came here Erwin has learned more words than I have ever known”. 11. Although he has already seen hundreds of Indians, he hasn't met a cowboy yet. 12. When he came to the West he thought that only cowboys lived there. 13. He soon found out that there were more Indians than real cowboys in New Mexico. 14. Since the beginning of the century the number of Indians in the USA has quadrupled. 15. When Columbus discovered America, 1 million Indians lived in today's USA. 16. In the following 4 centuries their number got smaller and smaller. 17. In the second half of the 19th century it reached its lowest level. 18. Since then the number of Indians has been growing steadily. 19. In contrast to this the real cowboys have nearly died out today. 20. In the last decades more and more white Americans have shown an interest in Indian culture.

p. 48

- I. 1. had tidied up/played; 2. had visited/had; 3. had had/opened; 4. had mixed/started; 5. had made/called; 6. had passed/went; 7. had made/sang; 8. had taken/bought; 9. had been/found; 10. had learned/got.
- II. 1. had been walking; 2. had already laid; 3. had you been working; 4. had lived in; 5. had you been learning; 6. had been; 7. had studied; 8. had broken; 9. had had; 10. had already applied; 11. had heard; 12. had taken; 13. had finished/had forgotten; 14. had got; 15. had had; 16. had missed; 7. had still not arrived; 18. had discovered; 10. had given; 20. had been.

p. 50

- I. 1. came/had been waiting; 2. didn't you come/has been; 3. wanted/had to stay; 4. did you do/had to stay; 5. came/were jumping; 6. haven't heard; 7. arrived/found/had been committed; 8. had not been standing/wanted; 9. said/had been watching/had heard; 10. had run/had seen; 11. had been wearing; 12. mentioned/ knew/was; 13. wrote/told; 14. did/was told; 15. smiled/said/have already solved; 16. have had/was/come; 17. was/had finished; 18. returned; 19. had arrested/had been trying; 20. was promoted/has been.
- II. 1. When Columbus discovered America, he thought that he had found a shorter way to India. 2. Since then we have found out that Columbus was wrong. 3. After the first settlers had come to America, they soon began to build villages and towns everywhere. 4. From the end of the 17th century till the end of the 19th century a continuous westward movement took place. 5. By 1890 the last great open areas had been settled. 6. Since then the situation for the immigrants has changed completely. 7. While/(whereas) they found work in the industrial centres in the first decades of this century, the immigrants have become a problem during recent years. 8. Before World War II the immigrants mainly came from Europe, but since the 1950s the number of immigrants from the Third World has been increasing steadily. 9. In addition, the number of illegal immigrants has increased recently. 10. In 1987 the government began to give many illegal immigrants the chance to become American citizens. 11. Never before had so many people had the possibility of becoming citizens of the United States at one time. 12. When we were in the USA the last time, we learned that many Mexicans had been waiting for the new law for many years. 13. In England the number of immigrants also strongly increased in the 1970s and early 1980s. In 1986 the British government tried to stop the flood of immigrants by a new law. 15. Since then fewer immigrants have come to Great Britain. 16. When he came in, he noticed that the other guest had already eaten all the sandwiches. 17. Although he had been looking forward to a steak all afternoon, he couldn't (wasn't able to) eat anything now. 18. The host told him, „We had been waiting for you for 2 hours, but when you weren't here by 8 o'clock we started dinner". 19. „We were just talking about you when you came in". 20. The guest replied „Unfortunately, I couldn't come earlier, because I still had to work at the office".

p. 54

- I. 1. We will arrive on the evening of the 4th of June. 2. We will spend 3 days there. 3. We will not visit the Empire State Building, but we will see the Statue of Liberty. 4. We will not stay at the Hilton, but we will stay at a cheaper hotel. 5. We will fly to Chicago. 6. We will visit an uncle of mine. 7. We will only stay 2 days. 8. We will not have time for that. 9. We will go to L. A. by Greyhound bus. 10. Yes, after that we will return to England.
- II. 1. We will arrive; 2. We will take; 3. We will arrive; 4. We will not go; 5. We will only have; 6. We will go; 7. We will visit Portobello Road Market the next morning; 8. Perhaps we will buy; 9. We will have; 10. In the afternoon we will go; 11. On Sunday morning we will go ... and (will) listen; 12. We will not stay... because we will meet; 13. In the evening we will go; 14. On Monday morning we will take; 15. There we will see; 16. In the afternoon we will go; 17. We will visit ... and (will) admire; 18. Later we will have; 19. We will not have ... because we will return; 20. At 8 o'clock we will have.
- III. 1. We will be watching; 2. Mother will be preparing; 3. The cat will be lying; 4. Later we will be playing; 5. Our parents will be talking; 6. Paul will be helping; 7. The baby will already be sleeping; 8. we will be having; 9. Grandma will be sitting; 10. We hope the sun will be shining.
- IV. 1. will be sitting/will be clapping; 2. will be crying; 3. will be trying; 4. will be working; 5. will be checking; 6. will be sitting/(will be) hoping; 7. will be preparing; 8. will be waiting; 9. will be controlling; 10. will already be scribbling.
- I. 1. are going to serve; 2. is going to make; 3. is going to welcome; 4. is going to give; 5. is going to start; 6. is going to perform; 7. are going to dance; 8. is going to be; 9. are going to show; 10. are going to answer.
- II. 1. It's going to rain; 2. leaves; 3. will be (are); 4. will happen; 5. will be lying; 6. is going to lose; 7. will tell; 8. will go; 9. isn't going to get (won't get); 10. is having; 11. will be seeing; 12. is going to be; 13. leaves; 14. Will you visit; 15. will probably be; 16. will never marry; 17. will fall (is going to fall); 18. will never travel (is never going to travel); 19. will be writing; 20. will be/will get.
- I. 1. will have asked; 2. will have given; 3. will have taken; 4. will have checked; 5. will have done; 6. will have done; 7. will have checked; 8. will have packed; 9. will have bought; 10. will have informed; 11. will have watered; 12. will have pulled; 13. will have turned off; 14. will have put; 15. will have taken.
- II. 1. he will have been sleeping; 2. they will have been building; 3. The dancers will have been practising; 4. we will have been living; 5. they will have been playing; 6. Jack will have been staying; 7. I will have been going; 8. Simon will have been playing; 9. father will have been repairing; 10. we will have been travelling.

- p. 65
- I.** 1. you wouldn't fall; 2. Would you mind; 3. I would like; 4. I would learn; 5. they would go out; 6. he would not listen; 7. would you like; 8. he would get; 9. she would be able; 10. would you do; 11. Would you open; 12. would help; 13. would make; 14. I would buy; 15. it wouldn't open.
- II.** 1. I would like to reserve/book a double room with a shower. 2. Would you like another tea? 3. Would you please take the letters to the post office as soon as possible? 4. In earlier year my father would go to his club every Sunday. 5. The gangsters told him to open the safe, but he wouldn't. 6. If I were you, I would phone him at once. 7. Would you mind me (my) coming an hour later? 8. Waiter, we would like to pay. 9. Would you please come to my place (call in) tomorrow evening. 10. He said he would fly to New York the following week.

- p. 69
- I.** 1. would have gone; 2. would you have done; 3. would have done; 4. would have stayed; 5. would have caught; 6. would have gone; 7. would never have asked; 8. would have done; 9. would have stopped; 10. would have met; 11. would have been glad; 12. would have been; 13. would have been; 14. would have finished; 15. would have been able to; 16. would not have been allowed; 17. would have been drowned; 18. would have liked; 19. would have bought; 20. would have painted.

- p. 75
- I.** 1. came/found out/had already cleaned; 2. couldn't believe/saw/entered; 3. was playing cards/was working; 4. would not eat; 5. will have been; 6. hasn't come/left; 7. told/would look/ were travelling; 8. does the sun always rise; 9. have been sitting/has arrived; 10. Why do workers nowadays never come/have promised; 11. would like/wouldn't allow; 12. accepted/had been working; 13. Have you ever visited; 14. was/would like; 15. had seen/recognized/came; 16. has not been sleeping/gets up; 17. was examining/was preparing; 18. would never have remembered/hadn't helped; 19. are/am/is going to rain; 20. didn't you tell/had never seen/come.

- II.** 1. I would like to visit him, but he hasn't phoned me for 2 weeks. 2. Two years ago when he came back to Germany for the first time in 10 years, he didn't know any more that we drive on the right side of the road. 3. When we were in the factory the last time, everyone was working very hard. 4. If I hadn't been to England so often, I would have liked to go to London once more. 5. When we were at the theatre last Friday, we met an old friend who we hadn't seen for 2 years. 6. Next year in October we will have been married for 20 years. 7. We have been living in this flat for 7 years now. Today it's not as nice as it was when we moved in. 8. During the last 2 years Virginia has constantly been ill. 9. After Sepp had been living in the USA for 5 years, he was glad to be allowed to return to Bavaria at last. 10. If Mr O'Neil had saved his money regularly, he would be a millionaire today. 11. After Ian had been robbed in his holidays last year, he said he would never come to Europe again. 12. During his last stay thieves had stolen

his golden wristwatch, which his grandfather had given (to) him years before. 13. Aaron didn't want to go home again, because he was afraid of his father. 14. Unfortunately, I cannot (won't be able to) visit you tomorrow, because I will be playing tennis from 10 to 12 o'clock. 15. When the film star came in, everybody stared at her as if they had never seen an actress before. 16. Oliver is just learning English, although he hates grammar. 17. Mr M. plays football with his son every Saturday. but he isn't playing this Saturday, because he hurt himself last week. 18. He has never been abroad in his life, but at Christmas he is going to fly (is flying/will fly) to Rio. 19. When the fire brigade arrived the whole house was on fire, although everybody had tried to extinguish the fire. 20. As a child I would have liked to go to the seaside, but my parents went to the mountains every year.

- p. 81
- I.** 1. A motorbike was bought by S. last week. 2. The old lady was helped by the boy scouts. 3. The letters will be typed by Mrs S. tomorrow. 4. The bike is being repaired by the boys. 5. The prize will be won by the best student. 6. German is spoken in A. 7. A hundred radios and TVs had been stolen by the thieves before the police caught them (before the thieves were caught by the police). 8. The drinks will be sent to us by the grocer tonight. We will be sent the drinks by the grocer tonight. 9. Books aren't sold any longer (by them). 10. The children have been told a good story by the nurse. A good story has been told to the children by the nurse. 11. The lazy workers were fired by the firm. 12. The postman was bitten by our dog some days ago. 13. The tyre was invented by Dunlop. 14. After the engine had been mended, they... 15. The suitcases have already been carried to the taxi by the porters. 16. Free soup was given to the poor by the church. The poor were given free soup by the church. 17. I have been given the necklace as a present by my sister. The necklace has been given to me as a present by my sister. 18. Good efforts were being made by the students. 19. The newspaper wasn't published any longer (by them). 20. Buckingham Palace is used as a city residence by the Royal Family.
- II.** 1. The police discovered the burglary. 2. People in many countries speak English. 3. They will elect Mr Carter. 4. They use the Tower of London as a museum nowadays. 5. They will pull down the house next year. 6. No one had opened this old trunk before. 7. ... her husband had already done the washing-up. 8. The cook was preparing the meat. 9. The weather forecast has announced bad weather. 10. The Duke sold the R. 11. The electrician has put the aerial on the roof. 12. I will translate the book. 13. Clever thieves have stolen the jewellery. 14. An earthquake destroyed the town completely. 15. Mrs C. has already watered the plants.
- III.** 1. Next year the new shopping-centre will be opened. 2. Last week the prize was given to us. We were given the prize last week. 3. 2 years ago the disco was closed, but it will be reopened soon by the new owner. 4. The lonely village had never been entered by a stranger before. 5. Before he came to London, a house had been rented for him by his firm.

GRAMATICA LIMBII ENGLEZE

p. 84

- I.** 1. The roof must be mended. 2. The windows should be cleaned at least twice a month (by them). 3. This question cannot be answered. 4. Their homework ought to be done properly (by them). 5. The dentist should be consulted regularly by children. 6. The problems couldn't be solved by the members of the committee. 7. This room mustn't be entered by the children. 8. The presents may be opened by the students after dinner. 9. The letters should be written by the secretary. 10. The best will be chosen by us.
- II.** 1. the methods to be used; 2. time to be lost; 3. problems to be solved; 4. letters to be written; 5. relatives to be visited.
- III.** 1. She really is to be pitied. 2. Many repairs are to be done. 3. The letters must be posted today. 4. Little remains to be said. 5. This tin mustn't be put near an open fire. 6. This book leaves many questions to be answered. 7. He is to be sent for at once. 8. This should be done by tomorrow. 9. The keys couldn't be found anywhere. 10. This question should have been asked earlier.

p. 85

- I.** 1. Most of the houses were destroyed by a thunderstorm. 2. The explanations weren't understood. 3. The bills have to be paid by us. 4. We were offered tea and biscuits by our hostess. Tea and biscuits were offered to us by our hostess. 5. The poem had to be learned by heart by us. 6. The cat is fed by Uncle R. every morning. 7. Meat is liked by lions. 8. „War and Peace” was written by Tolstoy. 9. The Egyptian grave was discovered by some scientists last year. 10. She was told the secret by Sam. The secret was told to her by Sam. 11. The castle was built in the 17th century. 12. The Museum of London can be visited every day except Mondays. 13. Mr S. was given notice by the boss some weeks ago. 14. The dog hadn't been looked after properly (by them) before it got ill. 15. The recipe hadn't been tried by the housewife before. 16. This old vase mustn't be touched (by you). 17. I haven't been shown the document. The document hasn't been shown to me. 18. Will her letter be answered by you? 19. We were shown the way by the friendly gentleman. The way was shown to us by the friendly gentleman. 20. An interesting radio play is just being broadcast by the radio station.
- II.** 1. We (you) made the discovery yesterday. 2. A careless driver killed two people. 3. Nobody has slept in this bed. 4. People were (Somebody was) laughing at them. 5. My boss gave me the opportunity. 6. Electricity drives the machine. 7. His son was helping him. 8. The same author wrote the books. 9. The police had warned the population. 10. The mountain rescue team had rescued him.
- III.** 1. Such things should be abolished. 2. It's reported that he is seriously injured. 3. The mistake couldn't be found. 4. Such hats are mostly worn by natives. 5. The missed purse was found by a little boy. 6. Some years ago the population was evacuated, a reservoir was built and the village was flooded. 7. He is said to be intelligent. 8. The heating must be (has to be) repaired before winter. 9. The cellar should be tidied up. 10. He was given a prize.

p. 91

- I.** **Statements** 1. (that) she has; 2. (that) we will all have to come in on Saturday. 3. The speaker says (that) it's going to rain. 4. (that) if the weather is fine, we can have a picnic. 5. (that) the Millers moved house last week. **Questions** 1. who broke this window; 2. Grandma asks when he will arrive. 3. The new neighbour asks where I/you do my/your weekly shopping. 4. if I/you have ever been. 5. where I was between 6 p.m. and 8 p.m. last Monday. **Commands** 1. Father tells me not to go; 2. to copy; 3. not to turn her/his radio; 4. The guide tells the visitors to be careful. 5. The label tells us not to iron this blouse.
- II.** **Statements** 1. (that) many houses had been destroyed by the thunderstorm, so that the inhabitants had been taken to a school building in the next village. 2. (that) he would join the school orchestra as soon as possible. 3. (that) we would have a meeting for parents the following Monday. The headmaster wanted to know how many of the all parents would come. 4. My brother said (that) they had been living in that town for many years and he thought they would stay there for the next few years. 5. Grandma told me (that) when she had been young, they had used to walk to school. 6. The teacher said (that) we would have to hand in the papers the next day, because he was going to correct them over the weekend. 7. My father remarked (that) somebody seemed to be in the living-room, he had just heard a strange noise. 8. S. said to her brother (that) they would celebrate their parents' anniversary the following week and (that) she was planning to buy something really nice for them. 9. The photographer said (that) when he had taken those photos he hadn't known that they were going to become ... 10. My Indian classmate told me (that) in India parents often chose the future husband for their daughter and that they sometimes hadn't even met ... **Questions** 1. when she was going to work; 2. if I could tell him; 3. if he would be able to finish those papers; 4. who could tell him where they had stopped the lesson before; 5. The new boy wanted to know for how long I had been a member... 6. where and when S. had been born and what his most famous plays were; 7. how I had done my maths homework before Dad had bought me; 8. if she could look after her cat while she was; 9. why young people always spoke; 10. The doctor wanted to know if Mr B. had called while he had been out. **Commands** 1. not to use; 2. to find out what had happened the night before; 3. not to be; 4. The announcer in the underground station told the passengers to mind the gap. 5. The teacher told Bob to stop talking; 6. not to feed; 7. The doctor told me to take; 8. to see him again the following Tuesday. 9. not to play with the video while they were away; 10. to finish the essay till the following week.
- III.** 1. (that) since I had been elected, the school magazine had very much improved and that he had even enjoyed the article about himself; 2. (that) their holidays had been terrible that year and that they had only got one hotel room instead of the two they had booked; 3. that water boils; 4. (that) his parents are; 5. (that) I mustn't drink coffee or smoke; 6. when my pop career

had started and what my plans for the future were; 7. that years before the Thames had been so polluted that no fish had been able to live in it; 8. why I had been out of work for 6 months and if I was not willing to work in a different job than the one I had had before; 9. (that) that had been near miss and that he had suddenly seen a plane right in front of him and (that) there had been nothing he had been able to do; 10. if I could help him and (he) said (that) he had been trying to solve that problem for 20 minutes then; 11. to fasten our seatbelts and to stop smoking; 12. (that) anybody who found the necklace and took it to the lost property office would get; 13. where he had lived before and which school he had gone to; 14. (that) 100 years before people had thought women should look; 15. (that) she had been driving along a lonely country road when suddenly a shining circulating object had landed right in front of her and (that) she was sure it had been a UFO; 16. how I had felt when my team had won the match the day before; 17. if they won the next election, they would change everything; 18. (that) he had called me at 5 o'clock but I hadn't answered the phone, so he hadn't been able to tell me; 19. (that) there would be little rain ... the day it would get; 20. if I could lend him £ 15 because he had forgotten his purse but (that) he would like to buy that CD.

p. 94

- I.** 1. when the teacher had asked him, he had been so nervous that he hadn't been able to answer although he had known; 2. to put those 20 sentences ... and to learn; 3. (that) due to bad weather conditions the flight to B. will be delayed; 4. if I would like; 5. if he wanted her to phone; 6. (that) my mother phoned half an hour ago and that she wanted to know if I was in. 7. if he had ever been to E. before or if that was his; 8. (that) that castle belonged to the Duke and (that) it had been open; 9. if she has received the postcard she wrote her from Spain; 10. (that) when they went to F., they would all have to look after their luggage themselves.
- II.** 1. ... asked me, „Do you prefer to wait for the alteration or shall we send it to you?” 2. ... told me, „Somebody has been (was) at the door.” 3. ... told us, „You have the wrong ticket and can't take this bus.” 4. „When will Mrs K. arrive and shall I pick her up?” 5. „Be at the stadium at 8 o'clock!” 6. ... waitress, „Will you accept cheques?” 7. „When is dinner ready?” 8. ... told him, „I have never been abroad before but I would like. ...” 9. ... said, „The concert was the most ...” 10. ... said, „You can move ...”

p. 106

- I.** 1. S. will have to wear; 2. S. will have to stay; 3. S. won't be able to have; 4. S. will be able to play; 5. S. will not be allowed to leave; 6. S. will have to attend; 7. S. won't have to do; 8. S. will have; 9. S. will have to make; 10. S. won't be able to speak.
- II.** 1. Children could swim; 2. Many children had to work because the family needed; 3. Mothers had to do; 4. Women weren't allowed to take; 5. Students had to walk; 6. Fathers couldn't spend... - They had to go; 7. The air was cleaner; 8. People had to spend; 9. Water had to be carried; 10. Girls weren't allowed to wear.

III.

1. I have been able to read; 2. I have been allowed to go; 3. I have had; 4. I have never needed; 5. I have never had to repeat; 6. I have been given; 7. I have always been able to do; 8. I have been allowed to drive; 9. I have never had to help; 10. I have been able to work.

IV.

1. You needn't help me if you haven't got time. 2. You should learn 20 words every day. 3. Could you please ask your brother if I can come tomorrow. 4. We had to stay longer, because we had to tidy up the classroom. 5. In 1960 a worker used to earn only £ 1.20 per hour. 6. Where shall I put the books? 7. Could you do me a favour? 8. You really shouldn't drink so much. 9. Since when has Mr P. been able to speak English so well? 10. Unfortunately, I won't be able to come (cannot come) tomorrow, because I'll have to (I have to) take my mother to the doctor. 11. The engine simply wouldn't start. 12. I would like to help you if I could. 13. Couldn't we go to the cinema? 14. We might visit aunt Paula at the weekend. 15. Would you like a single or a double room? 16. You mustn't (are not allowed to) open the parcel before your birthday. 17. If you can type these letters for me today, you'll be allowed to (you may) come an hour later tomorrow morning. 18. When will you finally be able to do your homework alone? 19. Since he had the accident he hasn't been able to walk. 20. Would you please phone the doctor and ask when I can come.

p. 109

I.

1. B. cannot speak; 2. The children don't like; 3. I won't be able to come; 4. He didn't phone; 5. He hasn't always been; 6. I couldn't read; 7. He hadn't known; 8. Sue isn't watching; 9. The neighbour's boy doesn't go; 10. You may not open; 11. He didn't come; 12. The children aren't; 13. The Millers didn't spend; 14. They don't always go; 15. I don't learn; 16. Mrs Burt wasn't; 17. I haven't heard; 18. The accident didn't happen; 19. You don't have; 20. Mr Cut doesn't work.

II.

1. Where were you born? 2. When were you born? 3. Where do you live? 4. How long have you been living in F.? 5. Where did you live before? 6. What is your job? 7. Where do you work? 8. Where did you go to school? 9. Where do your parents live? 10. How long have you been working in this firm? 11. Do you like your job? 12. How many children have you got? 13. Where do your children go to school? 14. Does your wife work? 15. Where did you learn German? 16. What do you do in your free time? 17. When do you start work in the morning? 18. When do you get home ...? 19. Do you like German food? 20. What is your favourite German meal?

III.

1. a) When did they open ...? b) Where did they open ...? c) What did they open ...? 2. a) Who lives in London? b) Where do the C. live? 3. a) When does P. play football? b) Who plays football...? c) What does P. do ...? d) Where does P. play football? 4. a) Who goes to work by underground? b) How does Mr C. go to work? 5. a) Who has been wor-

king hard ...? b) How long has he been working hard? c) How has he been working for this test? 6. a) Where did C. C. start his career? b) Who started his career in London? 7. a) Where did the students have to look up ...? b) Who had to look up ...? c) What did the students have to look up ...? 8. a) What happened at 4 o'clock ...? b) Where did the accident happen? c) When did the accident happen? 9. a) Why didn't you go out? 10. a) How often do you go to the cinema? b) Where do you go to once a week?

IV. 1. When do you usually go to bed? 2. How long haven't you spoken to him? 3. When did the famous actor die? 4. What did he get? 5. When did they build the department store? 6. When does she usually prepare dinner? 7. What did the butler do? 8. When did he stop smoking? 9. What does the secretary speak? 10. Who moved last month? 11. What does Grandpa drink every evening? 12. What did scientists discover years ago? 13. When will he arrive? 14. Why did you stay at home? 15. Where did she learn typing? 16. Who(m) did the police arrest? 17. Who is just painting the house?

V. 1. My parents don't go out very often. 2. Do you see the building over there? 3. Do you still go to work by bike? 4. I don't live in Munich. 5. Why didn't you come yesterday evening? 6. I didn't have time. 7. Do you like pizza? 8. Did you watch the film yesterday? 9. I don't know Mr M. 10. Where does your father work? 11. Why don't you phone Mary? 12. Last week she didn't visit her sick aunt. 13. She doesn't work properly. 14. When did you go to bed yesterday? 15. Why didn't you ask me last week?

p. 113 1. didn't he? 2. don't you? 3. isn't he? 4. is she? 5. won't you? 6. wasn't she? 7. don't you? 8. don't they? 9. did she? 10. haven't you? 11. has she? 12. do they? 13. doesn't he? 14. won't he? 15. was she? 16. do you? 17. would she? 18. must they? 19. could they? 20. mightn't it? 21. isn't he? 22. does she? 23. can't you? 24. can you? 25. didn't they? 26. isn't it? 27. doesn't he? 28. wasn't it? 29. will you? 30. doesn't he?

p. 115 1. I can; 2. she is; 3. I have; 4. she didn't; 5. they aren't; 6. I have; 7. I won't; 8. she wasn't; 9. I needn't; 10. I didn't; 11. I would; 12. he has; 13. he may not; 14. she hadn't; 15. he did; 16. she wasn't; 17. I won't; 18. I'm not; 19. she hasn't; 20. he did; 21. he may; 22. she doesn't; 23. I haven't; 24. I wasn't; 25. you shan't; 26. I haven't; 27. I can; 28. I have; 29. I don't; 30. he did.

p. 116 I. 1. could (was able to); 2. will be able to; 3. will have to; 4. wasn't allowed to; 5. has never been; 6. I didn't have to; 7. couldn't (wasn't able to); 8. has never been able to; 9. haven't got (don't have); 10. had to; 11. will be able to; 12. will not be allowed to; 13. was; 14. didn't you; 15. had had to; 16. are not allowed to; 17. will not have to; 18. are not allowed to; 19. had to/was; 20. will not be able to.

II. 1. Could you lend me your pencil, please? 2. May I introduce Mr M. to you? 3. May the children (Are the children allowed to) play in the garden? 4. He will not be able to enter the house, because he has forgotten his keys. 5. Can't your glasses lie on the dining-table? 6. She doesn't have to (She needn't) work on Monday. 7. Can't we go to the theatre? 8. Since when have you been able to speak F.? 9. P. doesn't like classical music, does he? 10. Do you know G. O.? – Yes, I do. 11. He didn't forget to lock the car yesterday. 12. In former times food used to cost much less. 13. M. hopes to be able to speak so much English in 2 years that she will be able to (can) speak with the foreign tourists in her souvenir shop. 14. They have had to take their son to the dentist every day for 2 weeks. 15. When entering a mosque, shoes must be (have to be) taken off. 16. Does your neighbour really clean her windows every day? 17. Did your friend move to Spain last year? 18. This pullover mustn't be washed. 19. The Baker children have never been allowed to have a party. 20. Could I have left my hat in the car?

p. 120 I. 1. to see; 2. to help; 3. to annoy; 4. answer; 5. to spell; 6. let/drive; 7. to phone; 8. to repair; 9. to get; 10. to land; 11. be repaired; 12. to be; 13. to study; 14. to arrive; 15. to let.

II. 1. to answer; 2. be left; 3. to stay; 4. to become; 5. to come; 6. to hear; 7. to listen; 8. to lock/get; 9. to elect; 10. to be painted; 11. to be discussed; 12. to be able to spend; 13. not to be found; 14. to get; 15. to blame.

III. 1. where to go to; 2. student to deserve the prize; 3. paper to leave the note on; 4. somebody to look after our children; 5. land to live on; 6. second to reach; 7. person to be hurt; 8. somebody to talk to; 9. pullover to go with; 10. whether to accept the invitation; 11. Englishman to sail; 12. how to take; 13. person to arrive and the last person to leave; 14. boy to act; 15. how to translate.

IV. 1. The caretaker wants all students to leave the school at 1 o'clock. 2. Mr C. is the second to fall off the horse today. 3. It's not easy to learn English grammar. 4. John is the only boy to have enrolled for the sewing course. 5. Mr K. is much too old to take part in the dancing competition. 6. The homework should be done properly. 7. The new boss wants me to stay longer in the office on Friday. 8. Yesterday our neighbour saw a man enter the garden. 9. Could you please come next weekend to help me with the preparations for the party? 10. It's time for him to look for a new job. 11. I can show you how to repair a tyre. 12. The police looked everywhere, but the pistol wasn't to be found. 13. Before we can move in a lot of work remains to be done. 14. John must be having his dinner right now. 15. There is no time to be lost.

p. 127 I. 1. H. promised to give up smoking. 2. The guide said we had the opportunity of visiting ...; 3. He is very proud of having passed his exam.

4. He complains about not earning enough money. 5. „You have the choice between learning your new words and not getting a good mark”. 6. He dreams of being ...; 7. It's no use relying on S. 8. She's busy preparing dinner. 9. He is not used to working long. 10. I'm looking forward to meeting ...; 11. I'll have to pay the workers for painting ...; 12. It's not worth reading. 13. We had difficulties in finding ... 14. I'm fond of playing tennis. 15. It's no use phoning him. 16. I won't be able to avoid meeting her. 17. I missed seeing the film. 18. He succeeded in getting ...; 19. After having dinner ...; 20. He is very good at dancing.

II. 1. He was always afraid of flying. 2. I risk losing my job if I help you. 3. The children are not used to staying up so late. 4. He was very disappointed about you(r) not having come to his birthday. 5. They came to England in the hope of being able to lead a better life there. 6. He didn't want to admit having made a mistake. 7. What is the reason for you(r) coming too late again? 8. I can't stand waiting long. 9. The customer insists on talking to the manager. 10. The vicar went on making his speech. 11. It's no use visiting him in hospital. 12. Would you mind me (my) opening the window? 13. He went on holiday instead of finishing his work. 14. I didn't have any opportunity of asking questions. 15. You can prevent the plants from dying if you water them regularly. 16. You should consider working together with S. 17. He was against spending more money on holidays. 18. Instead of finally telling me the truth, he made up more lies. 19. He has always been fond of travelling. 20. Judith was very angry about not having met you.

p. 128

1. to have; 2. go/walk; 3. to write; 4. seeing; 5. to be run; 6. to understand; 7. laughing; 8. cutting; 9. to go; 10. to go; 11. to swim; 12. leaving; 13. to get; 14. winning (having won); 15. repairing; 16. to say; 17. trying to make; 18. to finish/looking up; 19. to tell/playing; 20. practising/to play (playing); 21. leave; 22. to come; 23. Looking at/being; 24. robbing.

p. 132

I. 1. 'll go; 2. 'll give; 3. 'll jump; 4. 'll catch; 5. sends/'ll go; 6. have; 7. 'll telephone; 8. shines/'ll have; 9. 'll take; 10. finds/'ll move; 11. 'll buy/have; 12. 'll run; 13. 'll be; 14. send/'ll get; 15. write/'ll be; 16. 'll call for/doesn't feel; 17. go on/'ll lose; 18. comes/'ll be; 19. 'll fly; 20. lends/'ll be able to.

II. 1. If I have today off, I'll go out. 2. If she should come, I'll tell you. 3. If you meet Mrs B., will you please tell her to phone me. 4. If C.'s repairing her bike at the moment, she'll be ready by 5 o'clock. 5. If the parcel doesn't come soon, I'll phone the firm. 6. If you water flowers during the day, they grow better. 7. If S. hasn't booked the journey yet, he should hurry. 8. If I find the city map, I can show you the street. 9. If C. has decided to stay in L., he should look for a flat. 10. If R. comes to G., he will phone you directly.

134

I. 1. would lend; 2. would call; 3. were; 4. lived; 5. would be; 6. wore/would laugh; 7. left/would be stolen; 8. would phone/knew; 9. was/would become; 10. believed/would become; 11. knew/could tell you (would be able to tell you); 12. were/would get; 13. would your father say/didn't pass; 14. had/wouldn't have; 15. would be/saw; 16. had/could play (would be able to play); 17. could (would be able to) apply/passed; 18. had/could go out (would be able to go out); 19. won/would buy; 20. read/would be.

II. 1. If I had enough money, I would already have bought the recorder. 2. He would catch the train if he hurried. 3. If the weather was better, we could go swimming. 4. If Carmen was a little bit more polite, she wouldn't get into trouble so often. 5. If there were fewer students in a class, the students could learn more. 6. If you got the £1000, you should really open a savings account. 7. I wouldn't have a free minute if I went to the tennis court as often as you do. 8. If my party were in the government, everything would be better. 9. If I were well I could go walking with you. 10. If we had to buy a new car, we would choose a faster car.

137

I. 1. would have been; 2. would have met; 3. would have caught; 4. had known; 5. had left; 6. had found/could have saved (would have been able to save); 7. hadn't worn/would have been; 8. had known/would have picked; 9. had been/would not have locked; 10. had done/wouldn't have happened; 11. had phoned/would have been able to reserve (could have reserved); 12. had gone/would have stayed; 13. had gone/wouldn't have been; 14. would have left/hadn't told; 15. had spent/wouldn't have become; 16. hadn't drunk/wouldn't have lost. 17. had asked/would have got; 18. had been raised/wouldn't have gone; 19. had applied/would have got; 20. had had/would have bought.

II. 1. We would have liked to help you moving house if we hadn't been on holiday. 2. If Carl hadn't had his sister with him; it would have become a boring evening. 3. If you hadn't driven so fast, you would have seen the traffic-lights. 4. I also wouldn't have believed it if I hadn't seen the photo. S. My mother would like to go to the theatre if she hadn't been so ill. 6. I would have lent you the book if I hadn't needed it myself. 7. If Sheila hadn't been so spoiled by her parents, she wouldn't be so selfish. 8. I could have repaired (would have been able to repair) the car myself if I had had the right tools. 9. If Leo hadn't always been so lazy, he could have passed (would have been able to pass) the exam. 10. It would have been better if you had asked the doctor.

- p. 138 I. 1. I'll go; 2. would know; 3. would be; 4. I'll go; 5. would stay; 6. I'll go; 7. like; 8. I'll have to go; 9. wouldn't have broken; 10. I'll be; 11. were/ wouldn't visit; 12. could have taken (would have been able to take); saw/ could take (would be able to take); 13. would have been able to get (could have got); 14. hadn't gone; 15. doesn't run; 16. was; 17. had obeyed; 18. hadn't robbed; 19. marries/ I'll be; 20. hadn't worked.
- II. 1. If he weren't such a fool, he would never have done this. 2. If I speak, I don't like to be interrupted. 3. He wouldn't have been dismissed if he had admitted the mistake at once. 4. If S. isn't feeling well at the moment, she should go to the doctor. 5. If P. sells the car, he must (I'll have to) go by bus again. 6. If R. comes in time, we can (I'll be able to) go to the zoo. 7. If we had found the papers earlier, it would have saved us a lot of work. 8. The two girls would have been drowned if a boat had not been nearby.

- p. 143 I. 1. shops; 2. children; 3. hovercraft; 4. bookshelves; 5. families; 6. days; 7. wives; 8. photos; 9. tomatoes; 10. cars; 11. buses; 12. friends; 13. companies; 14. boats; 15. bushes; 16. boys; 17. gentlemen; 18. Americans; 19. Japanese; 20. feet; 21. cigarettes; 22. glasses; 23. pens; 24. clocks; 25. pieces; 26. tickets; 27. houses; 28. ferries; 29. windows; 30. noses; 31. toys; 32. bodies; 33. chiefs; 34. apples; 35. streets; 36. managers; 37. teachers; 38. bases; 39. letters; 40. parrots; 41. donkeys; 42. brothers; 43. keys; 44. purses; 45. radios; 46. pictures; 47. trees; 48. boxes; 49. flowers; 50. bags.
- II. 1. chairmen; 2. handbags; 3. record-shops; 4. bathing-costumes; 5. sons-in-law; 6. air traffic controllers; 7. teach-ins; 8. mouse-traps; 9. menservants; 10. women-haters; 11. horsemen; 12. passers-by; 13. sit-ins; 14. schoolboys; 15. armchairs; 16. bookcases; 17. men students; 18. forget-me-nots; 19. roundabouts; 20. broadcasting stations; 21. bus-drivers; 22. ticket-collectors; 23. have-nots; 24. snowmen; 25. fellows; 26. schoolmasters; 27. onlookers; 28. bedrooms; 29. good-for-nothings; 30. dining-tables.

- p. 146 I. 1. are; 2. are; 3. is; 4. supports; 5. is; 6. is; 7. are; 8. are; 9. lead; 10. are; 11. isn't; 12. are lying; 13. is; 14. have; 15. have; 16. aren't; 17. is turning; 18. is found; 19. are just having; 20. consists; 21. are; 22. are; 23. are; 24. are; 25. are.
- II. 1. The staff are on holiday. 2. The audience is requested to be quiet. 3. The class are just writing a test. 4. The homework is very difficult. 5. This information wasn't written in the newspaper. 6. Great progress has been made. 7. Your jeans are torn. 8. The people were very excited.

9. mumps is an unpleasant disease. 10. The binoculars belong to my grandfather. 11. The jury withdraw for their consultations. 12. The choir is just singing my favourite song. 13. The shorts are already in the suitcase. 14. The group consists of 10 members. 15. The firm needs new office rooms.

- 150 I. 1. my cat's; 2. mother's; 3. the ladies'; 4. Fred's; 5. the women's; 6. my sister's; 7. father's; 8. the girls'; 9. James'; 10. a five minutes'; 11. grandfather's; 12. today's; 13. the greengrocer's; 14. America's; 15. the chemists; 16. your aunt's; 17. the Smiths'; 18. our neighbours'; 19. the dog's; 20. the secretaries'; 21. my little brother's; 22. the boss'; 23. my brother's; 24. Anne's; 25. my friends'; 26. tomorrow; 27. Mr Carter's; 28. the morning's; 29. my parents'; 30. the students'.
- II. 1. the wall of the garden; 2. cup of tea; 3. page of the book; 4. 3 minutes' discussion; 5. the bird's cage; 6. my employer's office; 7. the frame of the picture; 8. loss of the briefcase; 9. Shakespeare's work; 10. Madame Tussaud's; 11. university of London; 12. last month's business; 13. Mr Red's secretary; 14. headline of the article; 15. at the Porter's; 16. length of the letter; 17. the teachers' room; 18. the old man's coat; 19. the Beatles' records; 20. the manager's salary; 21. lock of the door; 22. the waiter's purse; 23. size of the book; 24. the guests' order; 25. the men's suitcases; 26. colour of the painting; 27. my sister's CD-player; 28. my friend's party; 29. Paul's birthday; 30. growth of the flowers.

151 1. Yesterday's news was shocking. 2. One of Mr Grant's colleagues has fallen ill. 3. The crowd were standing around when I came and all were waiting at the baker's to get the sportsman's autograph. 4. After a 2 hours' meeting all the members of the club were rather tired. 5. The crew of the plane are just striking. Therefore we'll have to go by one of my boss' private planes. 6. The second of Karl's ideas seems to be the best. 7. Davis' pyjamas have disappeared again. He'll have to take some of Tom's. 8. The beggar's belongings consisted of a suitcase and a pair of old uniform trousers. 9. The group are still working at their project, but the financial situation of the firm will soon put an end to the project. 10. Great damage was caused by the explosion of the gas-stove.

- p. 156
- I.** 1. a; 2. an; 3. an; 4. a; 5. an; 6. a; 7. a; 8. an; 9. a; 10. a; 11. an; 12. a; 13. a; 14. a; 15. a; 16. an; 17. an; 18. a; 19. an; 20. a; 21. an; 22. an; 23. a; 24. an; 25. a; 26. an; 27. a; 28. a; 29. a; 30. a.
- II.** 1. a; 2. an; 3. a/a; 4. a; 5. an; 6. a; 7. a; 8. a/a; 9. a; 10. 11. an; 12. a; 13. a; 14. a; 15. a; 16. a/a; 17. an; 18. a; 19. a; 20. a/an.
- III.** 1. -; 2. the; 3. the; 4. -; 5. -; 6. the/-; 7. -/-; 8. the/the; 9. the/the; 10. -/-; 11. the/-; 12. -; 13. the/-; 14. -; 15. the/the/the; 16. the/-/the; 17. the; 18. -; 19. -/-; 20. the.
- IV.** 1. such a; 2. half a bottle; 3. absurd a story; 4. quite a nice; 5. Both the parents; 6. as a good lawyer; 7. £ 5.50 a bottle; 8. What a good; 9. half the sum; 10. such a hurry.

- p. 158
- I.** 1. -; 2. the; 3. a; 4. -/a; 5. -; 6. -; 7. -; 8. -/the; 9. -/the/the; 10. the/a; 11. -; 12. -; 13. -/a; 14. a; 15. a.
- II.** 1. Nature is sometimes cruel. 2. The work I am doing at the moment is boring. 3. After his A-level my son will go to university. 4. The caretaker fixed a loudspeaker on the roof of the school. 5. When S. saw the dog, he fled. 6. As a rule our secretary is very reliable. 7. He is such a difficult boy. 8. As a good friend I can give you the following advice. 9. Yesterday was rather a cold day. 10. Peter is rather a strong boy. He always has a good appetite. 11. He worked five hours without a break. 12. It is really a pity that you can't come. 13. Most students don't like grammar. 14. My uncle works as a psychiatrist in the prison. 15. One of the patients is „Big Sam”, who has been in prison for five years.

- p. 164
- I.** 1. cleaner – cleanest; 2. hotter – hottest; 3. more radical – most radical; 4. thirstier – thirstiest; 5. nicer – nicest; 6. softer – softest; 7. happier – happiest; 8. more democratic – most democratic; 9. thicker – thickest; 10. fatter – fattest; 11. greater – greatest; 12. narrower – narrowest; 13. smaller – smallest; 14. younger – youngest; 15. quicker – quickest; 16. more polite – most polite; 17. larger – largest; 18. more difficult – most difficult; 19. cooler – coolest; 20. simpler – simplest; 21. more efficient – most efficient; 22. more nervous – most nervous; 23. cheaper – cheapest; 24. dirtier – dirtiest; 25. more characteristic – most characteristic; 26. sunnier – sunniest; 27. prettier – prettiest; 28. luckier – luckiest; 29. uglier – ugliest; 30. more competent – most competent.
- II.** 1. easier than; 2. as expensive as; 3. the sooner the better; 4. the smallest; 5. as nice as; 6. not as old as; 7. less big than; 8. more and more expensive; 9. the best; 10. lazier than; 11. as cheap as; 12. longer than; 13. better and better; 14. the most difficult; 15. less nice than; 16. the most interesting; 17. newer than; 18. as thick as; 19. less polite than; 20. the more children the livelier; 21. as tired as; 22. the richest; 23. not as long as; 24. thirstier than.

- p. 165
1. The rich can afford servants. 2. This exercise is more difficult than the last (one). 3. My father's car is nearly as fast as a sports car. 4. Mr Pit is the oldest inhabitant of this town. 5. Food is getting more and more expensive. 6. Sometimes the young don't understand the old. 7. My elder brother works in a bank. 8. The police make further investigations. 9. Where is the nearest bus-stop? 10. The students become more and more childish. 11. Fewer people than expected came to the concert. 12. My friend is 2 years older than me. 13. The more he has, the more he wants. 14. He is less stupid than I thought. 15. My friend is the most intelligent boy in class. 16. In the last half of the century there were economic difficulties. 17. Sam is not as good as Kelly at school. 18. The more he speaks, the better his English becomes. 19. Fewer and fewer young people go to church. 20. I'll give you further details later.

- 172
- I.** 1. directly; 2. fast; 3. fully; 4. fantastically; 5. correctly; 6. carefully; 7. happily; 8. truly; 9. extremely; 10. in a silly way; 11. cheaply; 12. probably; 13. busily; 14. pretty/prettily; 15. fair/fairly; 16. rarely; 17. recently; 18. intelligently; 19. well; 20. sadly; 21. far; 22. powerfully; 23. sweetly; 24. loudly; 25. sensibly; 26. bravely; 27. slowly; 28. hopefully; 29. basically; 30. wisely; 31. angrily; 32. wholly; 33. politely; 34. weekly; 35. fluently; 36. regularly.
- II.** 1. better – best; 2. more slowly – most slowly; 3. longer – longest; 4. more quietly – most quietly; 5. more deeply – most deeply; 6. more nervously – most nervously; 7. less – least; 8. more – most; 9. more extremely – most extremely; 10. more quickly – most quickly; 11. worse – worst; 12. more fluently – most fluently; 13. more softly – most softly; 14. more nicely – most nicely; 15. more prettily – most prettily; 16. more sweetly – most sweetly; 17. more gladly – most gladly; 18. more loudly – most loudly; 19. sooner – soonest; 20. earlier – earliest; 21. higher – highest; 22. more angrily – most angrily; 23. faster – fastest; 24. worse – worst.
- III.** 1. ... to the bus-stop at 7 o'clock. 2. My sister Maud was studying very hard in her room all day yesterday. 3. He has never been to London in his life. 4. Let's go to the cinema this evening. 5. Sue sang very well at the competition in Oxford 2 days ago. 6. The visitors had to wait in front of the door a little while. 7. Come again soon! 8. He had never seen a musical on stage before. 9. He has been in the park twice today. 10. She walked once before supper. 11. Unfortunately, he had to stay in hospital for 3 days. 12. Our friend usually helps me in the garden at the weekend. 13. The cat was lying quietly on the sofa. 14. I seldom go shopping in Paris.
- 174
1. seriously 2. serious; 3. seriously; 4. usually/loudly; 5. usual; 6. loud/terrible; 7. happily; 8. Happy; 9. happily; 10. high; 11. high; 12. highly elegant; 13. surprising; 14. surprisingly/really;

15. surprisingly polite; 16. well; 17. good; 18. good; 19. completely; 20. complete; 21. completely; 22. regularly; 23. regularly; 24. easy; 25. easily; 26. easily; 27. careless; 28. especially/carelessly; 29. really; 30. real; 31. nervous; 32. great; 33. sad; 34. carefully; 35. weak; 36. good; 37. angrily.

p. 175

1. Sally looks very nice in her extremely long coat. 2. At first his explanations sounded strange, but then they turned out to be true. 3. If the cake remains in the oven any longer, it won't taste so good any more. 4. From the plane the mountains didn't look so high. 5. The cat was lying in front of the fireplace. Its fur felt soft and warm. 6. He worked very hard, but had hardly any success. 7. Have you already tasted the good jam? 8. Kevin is very ill. Yesterday he felt worse than ever before. 9. When he suddenly heard a noise, he excitedly looked behind him. 10. Why must Sam always behave so stupidly? After all, he is fairly intelligent. 11. She felt so tired that she could hardly keep her eyes open. 12. Every rule will be explained as soon as possible. 13. The patient impatiently waited for the doctor. 14. Fortunately, he wasn't seriously injured. 15. As he doesn't take his studies very seriously; he probably won't do very well in the exam. 16. The beef looks delicious and smells very good. 17. As usual my grandfather was sitting on the comfortably warm porch. 18. When he heard a strange noise in the cellar, he carefully felt his pistol. 19. Mary doesn't see very well, but nevertheless she is a good student. 20. Sam sounded very happy when he heard the good news.

p. 177

- I. 1. She; 2. them; 3. It; 4. them; 5. It; 6. it; 7. it; 8. It; 9. them; 10. She/it; 11. it; 12. He; 13. them; 14. They; 15. them; 16. it; 17. He/it; 18. it/him; 19. they; 20. We/it; 21. it; 22. It; 23. it; 24. them; 25. They; 26. She; 27. He/it.
- II. 1. I think you are nicer than all of them (them all). 2. Who is knocking? - It's me. 3. Can you introduce him to me? 4. I saw you only yesterday. 5. have never seen them here. 6. He is as old as me. 7. Who is coming to the cinema? - Me! 8. Can you give them the letters, please? 9. You must always do your duty. 10. They say this winter is going to be very cold.

p. 180

- I. 1. His; 2. Her; 3. his; 4. his; 5. his; 6. Her; 7. His; 8. hers; 9. their; 10. mine (ours); 11. hers; 12. hers; 13. hers; 14. his; 15. his; 16. our; 17. Their; 18. my; 19. Their; 20. His; 21. their; 22. my; 23. Her; 24. their; 25. his; 26. their; 27. his; 28. her; 29. Their; 30. my.
- II. 1. Have you seen my bag? 2. The cover of my book is missing. 3. He is a colleague of his. 4. Peter has always had a room of his own. 5. They attended their three months' French course. 6. That is not your suit case. It's mine. 7. I can't get the idea out of my mind. 8. I have already met his sister. 9. Your house is very nice. 10. Have you got a room of your own?

183

- I. 1. which; 2. what; 3. which; 4. which; 5. what; 6. what; 7. which; 8. which; 9. what; 10. which; II. what; 12. which; 13. which; 14. which; 15. which; 16. what; 17. which; 18. which; 19. what; 20. what.
- II. 1. what; 2. what (who/m); 3. who(m); 4. what; 5. what (who); 6. whose; 7. what; 8. whose; 9. what; 10. which; 11. what; 12. who; 13. what (who/m); 14. what; 15. who(m); 16. who; 17. which; 18. who (which); 19. whose; 20. who.
- III. 1. Who would you like to spend your holiday with? 2. What kind of magazine is your her looking at? 3. What is your favourite pop group? 4. Who were you introduced to? 5. Who did your brother sell his car to? 6. Who called me? 7. Who do you have to send the photos to at once? 8. What is in the wardrobe? 9. Who were the boys laughing at? 10. Which one is yours? II. Who have you seen before? 12. Who knows Mr Baker? 13. What films do you like best? 14. What is published by a brewery? 15. Who would your mother like to talk to?

186

- I. 1. myself; 2. herself; 3. himself; 4. yourself (yourselves); 5. ourselves; 6. himself; 7. himself; 8. himself; 9. himself; 10. themselves; 11. himself; 12. herself; 13. yourself; 14. yourself; 15. myself; 16. myself; 17. themselves; 18. yourself (yourselves); 19. herself; 20. yourself (yourselves).
- II. 1. you; 2. ourselves; 3. ourselves; 4. him; 5. her; 6. herself; 7. herself; 8. himself; 9. itself; 10. themselves; 11. him; 12. us; 13. yourself (yourselves); 14. herself; 15. herself.
- III. 1. -; 2. you; 3. itself; 4. herself; 5. itself; 6. yourself (yourselves); 7. -; 8. -; 9. herself; 10. himself; 11. herself; 12. you; 13. -; 14. himself; 15. himself; 16. themselves; 17. -; 18. -; 19. -; 20. herself; 21. himself; 22. herself; 23. -; 24. herself; 25. yourself (yourselves).
- IV. 1. each other; 2. each other (ourselves); 3. herself; 4. each other; 5. yourself (yourselves); 6. each other; 7. myself; 8. myself; 9. each other/each other; 10. ourselves.

190

- I. 1. this/that; 2. these/those; 3. this/those; 4. these/those; 5. this/that; 6. this/that; 7. this/that; 8. this/that; 9. this/that; 10. this/those; 11. this/that; 12. this/that; 13. his/those; 14. this/that; 15. this/those.
- II. 1. those; 2. that; 3. these/those; 4. that/this; 5. this/that; 6. this/that; 7. this/that; 8. that; 9. those; 10. those.
- III. 1. Our house is much smaller than that of our neighbour. 2. Are those your suitcases over there? 3. These are my friends, Pit and Herbert. 4. Which of the girls is Sue? - This one here. 5. I think these chairs are much more comfortable than those ones. 6. Which suit do you think is nicer? This one or that one? 7. I cannot walk that far. 8. Isn't that the famous singer over there? 9. You can take either this or that way. 10. I have never seen that lady over there.

- p. 195 I. 1. who; 2. which; 3. who; 4. which; 5. who; 6. which; 7. who(m); 8. which; 9. which; 10. which; 11. which; 12. which; 13. which; 14. which; 15. which; 16. who; 17. who; 18. which; 19. which; 20. who.
- II. 1. whose; 2. which; 3. who; 4. which; 5. who(m); 6. which; 7. which; 8. who; 9. whose (of which); 10. who; 11. whose; 12. who; 13. whose; 14. who; 15. which; 16. which; 17. who; 18. which; 19. which; 20. whose.
- III. 1. which; 2. -; 3. which; 4. -; 5. -; 6. -; 7. -; 8. -; 9. -; 10. which; 11. which; 12. which; 13. who; 14. whose; 15. which; 16. who; 17. -; 18. which; 19. which; 20. -.

- p. 197 1. He always leaves the door open behind him. 2. The Great Fire of London, which broke out in a bakery in Pudding Lane in 1666, destroyed large parts of London. 3. The Museum of London, which shows the history of the town, is closed on Mondays. 4. Whose coat are you wearing? - Isn't it mine? 5. Is this my bag here? - No, that one over there is yours. 6. He cut himself in his finger yesterday. 7. Those roses over there are really beautiful. Do you think your aunt would give me some? 8. Who have you lent your new bike to? 9. Could you please write down your phone number for me? 10. Who are you writing to? 11. I can't remember having seen your sister before. 12. My friend, whose mother is a cook, cannot cook at all. 13. Who lives in that big house over there? 14. The man the police are looking for has escaped from that prison. 15. He has got three daughters, who all work for the same firm. 16. He hasn't given her the book back yet. 17. They talked to each other like good friends although they didn't know each other. 18. May I sit down or is this seat taken? 19. Which coat shall I take, the thick blue one or the this black one? 20. I need the book as a present for him, not for myself. 21. The glass you are drinking out of is still dirty. 22. The parcel she sent me was damaged. 23. I don't like those people. 24. Peter offered his help at once, which was very surprising. 25. What colour is your hair? 26. He lives with his sister in that little house over there. 27. Simon went to buy Christmas presents all by himself. 28. He came with his hat in his hand. 29. I haven't met him personally. 30. Who are you thinking of?

- p. 206 I. „At”, „in”, or „on”? 1. in; 2. in; 3. At; 4. in; 5. at ... at; 6. In; 7. On; 8. in; 9. on; 10. on; 11. on; 12. in; 13. on; 14. at; 15. at; 16. in; 17. on; 18. on; 19. at; 20. on. „Above”, „over”, „across” or „via”? 1. over; 2. above; 3. over; 4. above; 5. via; 6. over; 7. over; 8. above; 9. across; 10. via; 11. across; 12. above; 13. across; 14. over; 15. across. „Under” or „below”? 1. below; 2. under; 3. below; 4. under; 5. below; 6. below; 7. under; 8. under; 9. under; 10. below. „Between” or „among”? 1. between; 2. between; 3. among; 4. between; 5. among; 6. among; 7. among; 8. between; 9. among; 10. among. „To” or „towards”? 1. to; 2. to-

- wards; 3. towards; 4. to; 5. to; 6. towards; 7. to; 8. to; 9. to; 10. towards. „To” or „as far as”? 1. to; 2. to; 3. to/as far as; 4. to; 5. as far as; 6. to; 7. to; 8. as far as; 9. to; 10. to. „After”, „behind”, „beyond” or „past”? 1. behind (past); 2. behind; 3. behind; 4. behind; 5. behind; 6. behind (beyond); 7. behind; 8. after; 9. after; 10. after; 11. behind; 12. after; 13. beyond; 14. after; 15. behind. „In front of” or „before”? 1. in front of; 2. in front of; 3. before; 4. in front of/before; 5. before; 6. in front of; 7. before; 8. before; 9. in front of; 10. before. „Ago” or „before”? 1. before; 2. ago; 3. ago; 4. before; 5. ago; 6. before; 7. before; 8. ago; 9. before; 10. ago. „Since” or „for”? 1. since; 2. since; 3. since; 4. since; 5. for; 6. since; 7. for; 8. for; 9. since; 10. since; 11. since; 12. for; 13. since; 14. since; 15. for. „By” or „with”? 1. by; 2. with; 3. by; 4. by; 5. by; 6. with; 7. by; 8. with; 9. by; 10. with.

- II. 1. off; 2. for; 3. about; 4. to; 5. by; 6. for; 7. out; 8. by; 9. for; 10. off; 11. about (of); 12. of (from); 13. to; 14. with; 15. on; 16. in; 17. down; 18. for (with); 19. by; 20. up; 21. in/in; 22. to; 23. for; 24. across; 25. with; 26. into; 27. for; 28. for; 29. like; 30. after; 31. into; 32. up; 33. up; 34. (up) on as; 35. out; 36. on; 37. about.

- III. 1. at/at; 2. about (for); 3. between; 4. about; 5. for; 6. among; 7. to/via; 8. ago; 9. by/by; 10. at; 11. to/since; 12. in; 13. on; 14. before/in (to); 15. to; 16. from; 17. for; 18. with; 19. with; 20. of-, 21. with; 22. behind; 23. in; 24. out; 25. out.
- II. 1. We have been living at 25 Church Street since 1995. 2. He insisted on opening the safe. 3. Children under 16 may not go in a pub. 4. I have already been waiting for Tom for an hour. 5. He died from (of) heart failure 2 days ago. 6. I have already heard so much about her that I'm looking forward to meeting her. 7. Please be on time tomorrow. 8. We have a small garden behind our house. 9. He lost his wallet in the tube yesterday. 10. She applied for the job of secretary at (the firm) Cup Ltd. I week ago. 11. On the right side you can see our house in the picture. 12. I'm usually at home at 6 o'clock in the evening. 13. You can reach me in the office between 1 and 2 o'clock. 14. He wrote a letter to his aunt and sent it by airmail. 15. He was found on a rock below the top of the mountain. 16. My mother has been working in this supermarket for 3 years. 17. He lived among the Indians for 5 years. 18. He understood the warning between the lines. 19. Three suitable candidates were among the applicants. 20. We arrived at the hotel in time for dinner. 21. When he went over the bridge, he saw a plane above him. 22. The accident happened on the evening of the 13th of October. 23. He liked living among the Indians in the jungle. 24. Look over your essay again. There is a mistake in line 2. 25. They have already been talking about his problems for half an hour now.

- p. 222 I. 1. when; 2. if; 3. when; 4. when; 5. if; 6. if; 7. if; 8. when; 9. if; 10. when.
 II. 1. during; 2. during; 3. while; 4. while; 5. during; 6. whereas; 7. while; 8. whereas; 9. during; 10. while; 11. during; 12. while; 13. during; 14. during; 15. while.
 III. 1. because; 2. since/as; 3. since/as; 4. because; 5. since/as; 6. since/as; 7. since/as; 8. because; 9. because; 10. because/for; 11. because; 12. since/as; 13. since/as; 14. since/as; 15. since/as; 16. because; 17. because; 18. since/as; 19. because; 20. because.
 IV. 1. So can I. 2. So is her brother. 3. So do I. 4. So will the Meyers. 5. Neither/Nor do her sisters. 6. Neither/Nor can I. 7. So do I. 8. Neither/Nor has my brother. 9. Neither/Nor had I. 10. Neither/Nor does he. 11. So must Peter. 12. Neither/Nor do I. 13. So can Susanne. 14. So can my friend. 15. So does Carmen.
 V. 1. like; 2. how; 3. like; 4. like; 5. how; 6. as ... as; 7. as; 8. like; 9. like; 10. as; 11. how; 12. as; 13. like; 14. like; 15. as; 16. as ... as; 17. like; 18. like; 19. as; 20. like.
- p. 226 I. 1. any; 2. any; 3. some; 4. some; 5. some; 6. some; 7. any; 8. any; 9. any; 10. any; 11. some; 12. any; 13. any; 14. any; 15. any; 16. some/any; 17. some; 18. any; 19. any; 20. some.
 II. 1. any; 2. some; 3. any; 4. any; 5. any/some; 6. any; 7. some; 8. any; 9. some; 10. any; 11. some; 12. some; 13. any; 14. any; 15. any; 16. some; 17. Some; 18. any; 19. any; 20. any.
- p. 228 I. 1. many; 2. many; 3. many; 4. many; 5. much; 6. much; 7. many; 8. much; 9. many; 10. much; 11. many; 12. much; 13. many; 14. much; 15. much; 16. many; 17. many; 18. much; 19. many; 20. much.
 II. 1. few; 2. little; 3. little; 4. few; 5. little; 6. few; 7. few; 8. few; 9. few; 10. few; 11. few; 12. little; 13. little; 14. few; 15. few; 16. little; 17. few; 18. little; 19. little; 20. few; 21. few.
 III. 1. I have got a lot of time. 2. He has got a lot of money. 3. The students have read a lot of books. 4. I can eat a lot of hamburgers. 5. There are a lot of trees in the park. 6. There is a lot of noise upstairs. 7. There are a lot of jobs available. 8. We had a lot of wind. 9. I have eaten a lot of apples. 10. He has drunk a lot of alcohol.
 IV. 1. fewer mistakes; 2. more money; 3. the least time; 4. less nature; 5. little water; 6. more shops; 7. the fewest rooms; 8. more tea; 9. fewer lamps; 10. the fewest students; 11. many friends; 12. more holidays; 13. most streets; 14. more windows; 15. fewer exercises; 16. most animals; 17. much trouble; 18. less damage; 19. more chocolate; 20. most books; 21. more teachers; 22. less help; 23. most time; 24. fewer houses.
- p. 222 I. 1. every; 2. every; 3. each; 4. any; 5. each; 6. all; 7. whole; 8. each; 9. all the; 10. each; 11. all; 12. any; 13. any; 14. all; 15. all; 16. whole/all;

17. all; 18. each; 19. each; 20. each; 21. all; 22. each; 23. all; 24. every; 25. all (the whole); 26. every/whole; 27. all the/each; 28. all/all the; 29. every; 30. all.

1. not; 2. none; 3. not; 4. no; 5. nobody; 6. none; 7. not; 8. nobody; 9. nothing; 10. not; 11. none; 12. none; 13. no; 14. not; 15. nothing/nobody; 16. not; 17. nobody/no; 18. no; 19. not; 20. not; 21. not; 22. none; 23. nothing; 24. nobody; 25. nothing; 26. none; 27. no; 28. nothing; 29. nothing; 30. none.

I. 1. both; 2. either; 3. both; 4. either; 5. both; 6. both; 7. both; 8. either; 9. both; 10. either; 11. both; 12. both; 13. both; 14. either; 15. both; 16. both; 17. either; 18. both; 19. either; 20. both; 21. either; 22. both; 23. both; 24. either; 25. both.

1. I go for a walk every day. 2. This year there are many cherries on the tree. 3. Nearly every student hates homework. 4. We have two neighbours. Both are very nice. 5. Mr S. seems to have plenty of (a lot of) money. 6. All the workers in this firm will get higher wages. 7. Would you like something to drink? 8. Some sentences are rather difficult. 9. If I had any time, I would help you. 10. Nothing will change my mind. 11. I still have to write so many letters that I will probably be busy for many more hours. 12. Nobody is without fault. 13. I liked only a few of the pictures at the exhibition. 14. Many people don't know how much energy could be saved by following some rules. 15. How many miles is it to London? 16. There was only little hope of finding the boys. 17. How many guests will come? 18. I will call you back in a few minutes. 19. Some people think French is easier than English. 20. All students look forward to the holidays. 21. Tell me something about your trip to America. 22. The teacher gave each of us a copy. 23. You must take these tablets every evening. 24. Since the weather was so bad, no people were on the beach. 25. None of the visitors was allowed to see the private rooms. 26. Neither of the two suggestions was good. 27. You can buy the record in any record shop. 28. Everything must come to an end. 29. That doesn't help me at all. 30. Only few women are in Parliament.

1. 1. My father bought a new car some years ago. 2. I sometimes watch TV in the evening. 3. Michael lent me £ 10. 4. His father didn't see him. 5. My aunt sent a parcel last week. 6. The children drank lemonade at the party. 7. I wish you all the best for the future. 8. She cooked a meal for her husband. 9. He has told the story to everybody. 10. I have written him a letter today. 11. The guide has just shown the rooms to the visitors. 12. The postman brought us a letter. 13. The secretary will make coffee for the boss. 14. I have never seen such beautiful flowers. 15. Mary got a drink for her father. 16. You should forgive his bad

behaviour. **17.** My father repaired my bike for me last week. **18.** That will save her some trouble. **19.** My mother is just knitting a pullover for me. **20.** I have asked him his name. **21.** The teacher explained the students the sentences. **22.** My father bought me the record. **23.** He could not understand me. **24.** I envy her nice dress.

- II.** **1.** Are the Children playing in the garden? **2.** Who broke the vase? **3.** Whose mother did you meet yesterday? **4.** How long has Peter been learning English now? **5.** Why did you come so late? **6.** Where are all the people going to? **7.** Did you ask him to give the money back? **8.** What boy broke the window? **9.** Where have you bought this good book? **10.** Who gave you this present? **11.** What time will he come? **12.** Why haven't you asked him? **13.** Who took these photos? **14.** Whose books did you find in the classroom? **15.** Which car do you prefer? **16.** Who did your brother meet yesterday? **17.** Since when have you not seen him? **18.** How do you do? **19.** What do you call this animal? **20.** How is your mother? **21.** Have you ever been to Paris? **22.** Do you like Sam's little brother? **23.** Can your secretary speak English fluently? **24.** Have you finished your homework?

p. 244

1. May God forgive you! **2.** Can you lend me £ 20? **3.** After rain comes sunshine. **4.** Such is life. **5.** I cannot ride a bike. – Nor (Neither) can I. **6.** I sent him a parcel yesterday. **7.** He has broken his arm. **8.** When he came out of the house he saw a strange person. **9.** He left the house at 7 o'clock. **10.** What child do you mean? **11.** Should it rain tomorrow, I'll stay at home. **12.** Has she made a mistake? **13.** Who(m) did you meet in town yesterday? **14.** Where will you spend your holidays? **15.** Peter is reading a story to his grandfather. **16.** Would you please show your father the letter! **17.** How many people live in this house? **18.** Does your friend speak Italian? **19.** Shall I send you the letter? **20.** There comes the train!

p. 249

centre – flat – ground floor – lift – dustbins – neighbours – lorry – theatres – neighbourhood – petrol – travelling – underground – railway – autumn – bookshops – shop assistants – quarrelling – post.